



Overviews & Analysis of the  
27 books of the New Testament

- By Adam Cesar

## Table of Contents

<u>Preface</u>	2
<u>The History Books</u>	3
<u>Matthew</u>	4
<u>Mark</u>	12
<u>Luke</u>	16
<u>John</u>	22
<u>Acts of the Apostles</u>	30
<u>The Epistles of Paul</u>	37
<u>Romans</u>	38
<u>1 Corinthians</u>	43
<u>2 Corinthians</u>	49
<u>Galatians</u>	52
<u>Ephesians</u>	57
<u>Philippians</u>	60
<u>Colossians</u>	64
<u>1 Thessalonians</u>	70
<u>2 Thessalonians</u>	74
<u>1 Timothy</u>	77
<u>2 Timothy</u>	83
<u>Titus</u>	87
<u>Philemon</u>	90
<u>Hebrews</u>	93
<u>The General Epistles</u>	98
<u>James</u>	99
<u>1 Peter</u>	103
<u>2 Peter</u>	108
<u>1 John</u>	112
<u>2 John</u>	117
<u>3 John</u>	119
<u>Jude</u>	122
<u>Revelation</u>	126
<u>A1: Key Truths from Romans</u>	132
<u>A2: Key truths from Hebrews</u>	140
<u>A3: Keys &amp; Overview of Revelation</u>	149

## **Preface**

The word of God is quick and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword. It is through continuing in the word of Christ that we become his disciples and know the truth which makes us free. What has changed my life is continuing in the word of God. Through continuing to read, study, meditate upon, teach, and obey the word of God, God has exposed many of the errors and sins of my heart, mind, and spirit, and has revealed to me HIS truth so that I might reject the evil and choose the good.

By God's grace, I have been continuing in the word of God for over twenty years as a student, disciple, teacher, and most importantly a son of God. This booklet was something that the Lord put in my heart to accomplish at the beginning of 2020 just as the COVID crisis began taking place on the earth and we were thrust into lockdown. It has taken me over a year to complete this, but I am thankful to have finally finished it.

This booklet contains overviews of each book of the New Testament. These overviews were developed for people that want to become serious disciples of Jesus Christ and his word. They are to help believers get a good sense of the books of the New Testament and to unlock some keys that will aid them in both their personal walk with Christ and their understanding of the scriptures. This booklet can also be an aid to teachers in teaching through the New Testament.

Each overview contains the following:

- I. Analysis of the Book including:
  - A. A brief synopsis of the book.
  - B. Information about the Author of the book.
  - C. Information about the Audience to whom the book was originally written.
  - D. Analysis paragraphs giving the overall sense of the contents of the book.
- II. An Outline of the book
- III. Key information such as: key characters, themes, words, verses, & numbers.
- IV. Extra Stuff such as: Fascinating studies (to help launch the student into deeper studies in the word) and/or additional information relevant to the book

The ultimate goal of these overviews is to aid people in getting deeper and more solid in the word of God. We are born again by the word of God. We are sanctified through the word of God. We feed on Christ through the word of God. We are equipped to engage in spiritual warfare by the word of God. And ultimately, we are made perfect through continuing in and obedience to all of the word of God.

May this booklet be a help in equipping yourself and others in your knowledge, understanding, faith, and love of the word of our God. And above all, may it drive you deeper into the Lord Jesus and his word so that you may be fully equipped to fulfill all that he has given you to do on this earth.

Lastly, all doctrine, themes, key points, and analysis in this book regarding the word of God were all developed from the text of the King James Holy Bible. There is only 1 pure text of the scriptures in the English language, and it is the King James Bible. All other versions will fall short in some areas or many. If you want to be precise in your knowledge of God and his word, then pick up a King James Bible and allow it to reshape your heart, mind, & spirit.

"Thy word is very pure: therefore thy servant loveth it." - King David (Psalm 119:140)

## **The History Books of the New Testament: The Gospels & Acts**

The New Testament begins with 5 history books. The first 4 books (Matthew, Mark, Luke, & John) are each gospel accounts (good news) about the life, ministry, death, burial, and resurrection of Jesus Christ the Son of God. Matthew and John were both apostles of the Lord Jesus, and therefore, they were personal eyewitnesses of much of what they wrote about in his ministry. Mark and Luke were neither apostles nor direct eyewitnesses of Jesus' ministry. However, they spent much time with the apostles and other eyewitnesses of Jesus, and therefore, their accounts are just as accurate and true as Matthew and John's. I believe the Holy Ghost purposely picked 2 men that were direct eyewitnesses and 2 men that were not to write the 4 gospel accounts in the New Testament to prove two important points. The first point being that our faith is built on real, legitimate, eyewitness testimonies. These stories are not legends or fables. Many people were eyewitnesses to the man Jesus of Nazareth, and the Bible contains written records by two of them. The second point that I also think to be important is that you don't have to be one of the eyewitnesses to Jesus in order to believe in him, know the truth, and preach the gospel with authority and power by the Spirit of God. Mark and Luke preach and teach the truth of who Jesus is and what he did with the same authority and power as Matthew and John the eyewitnesses do. The gospel and Spirit of God are just as powerful for non-eyewitnesses (like us) as they were for those who actually walked with Jesus in the flesh during his time here on earth.

Jesus Christ came into this world for MANY purposes, and thus, we have 4 different books written by 4 different men all inspired by the same Holy Ghost to emphasize different aspects of his ministry, his fulfillment of the will of God on earth and how it relates to the different people groups (Jew, Gentile, & Church). In order to truly get a FULL picture of who Jesus is, what he is like, how he operates, what his mission and purposes are, what he teaches and loves, what he is against and hates, and how to be accepted by him into his kingdom, (and many other things...), we really need all 4 of these gospel accounts. Just as there are 4 directions one can travel on this earth, 4 winds of heaven, 4 corners to the holy temple of God, 4 carpenters prophesied of that fray and cast out the horns of the Gentiles, and 4 beasts that stand around the throne of the Almighty God always bearing witness to his holiness and glory without ceasing for ever and ever, so too are there 4 books given by God to bear witness to the great holiness and glory of our Lord Jesus Christ for all time sent forth to the 4 corners of the earth to stir up the Spirit of God so that the sins and iniquities of the Gentiles might be cast out of our hearts so that we might be built upon this holy temple of the church of Jesus Christ. These books are marvelous, and they are worthy of our reading, study, devotion, meditation, and yielding in obedience to for the rest of our lives.

After these 4 gospel accounts, there is 1 book of the history of the early church and spread of the gospel: the book of the Acts of the Apostles. This book starts right where the gospels end with Jesus (after his resurrection) giving his final instructions to his 11 apostles and then ascending back to heaven. The book of Acts is actually part two of the gospel of Luke and it covers about the first 32 years of the early church (from approximately A.D. 30 to A.D. 62). This book shows the spread of the gospel and work of some of the key apostles (Peter and Paul especially) in Jerusalem, other parts of Israel, Asia Minor, and parts of Europe.

Just as the Old Testament begins with the 5 key foundational books (the Law), so too does the New Testament start with the 5 key foundational books about Jesus Christ and his apostles. The faith of the New Testament is built upon Jesus Christ and his apostles. Thus, these 5 books are so vital for the proper faith, understanding, and spirit of the New Testament in Jesus Christ.

## **Matthew - “Gift of Jehovah”**

**Written around A.D. 40**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: The gospel according to Matthew reveals Jesus as the promised seed of Abraham and David, thereby making him the Messiah and King of the Jews. This book reveals Jesus as the King, coming to offer the “kingdom of heaven” to the nation of Israel. This book focuses on the righteousness, commandments, instruction, and mysteries of the kingdom of heaven. It reveals how Jesus came to fulfill all that was written in the law and the prophets, and to ultimately be the perfect sacrifice to finish the old covenant and “save his people from their sins.” Ultimately, Israel as a whole rejected their Messiah, and so the apostles were sent to bring this instruction of the new covenant and Christ’s kingdom to all nations as Jesus builds his church upon himself.
- B. Authorship: Written by Matthew the apostle. Important things to consider regarding Matthew and this book:
  - 1. Matthew was originally known as Levi, and was the son of Alphaeus. He was an educated Jewish young man and quite possibly a Levite. The Levites filled the offices of the priesthood, the ministries of the temple and synagogues, and were the scribes of the scriptures. Thus, Matthew was thoroughly versed in the Old Testament scriptures.
  - 2. Matthew was a publican (or tax collector) for the Roman occupiers. Based on this fact, we can deduce a few things about the man Matthew. First off, we can deduce that he was quite intelligent. Secondly, we can deduce that he was a skilled accountant (and good at keeping and tracking records). Third, we can deduce that he knew how to do a very good job for his superiors. And lastly, we can deduce that he didn’t care too much what other people thought of him (as tax collectors were quite despised by the Jews). Based on these facts, once Matthew decided to leave everything behind to follow Jesus, we can see how these talents, abilities, and character traits were put to use for Christ, and we can see all these attributes coming through in his gospel account. Matthew clearly had a math mind that was good at connecting the dots and piecing key information together, which is why he could clearly see so many things in the OT that Christ fulfilled. He was clearly governmentally and operations minded as well, as Matthew is very “kingdom” focused and reveals Christ mostly through his kingdom, its laws, and operations. He probably also was a good teacher (usually people with good organizational and operations skills make good orderly teachers), which is why he reveals so much of Christ’s teaching (doctrine). He doesn’t so much look at Christ teaching people on a personal level (like Luke), but he looks at Jesus teaching key laws, statutes, and parables describing the overall nature, operations, and culmination of the kingdom.
  - 3. Ultimately, Matthew was one of the original 12 apostles hand-chosen by Jesus Christ, and so a lot of the information in this gospel account was his personal eyewitness testimony of Jesus Christ.
- C. Audience: Predominately Jewish believers in Jesus Christ
  - 1. The Jews were given the oracles of God. They were given the written scriptures. They were given the covenants and the promises. The Jews had a major

advantage over the Gentiles. However, greater advantage also brings greater accountability. Matthew's gospel was written to show the Jews that Jesus was indeed the Son of God according to the prophecies of the prophets.

D. Analysis:

1. **The book of the generation of Jesus Christ!** Genesis is the first book of the Old Testament and it is the book of "generations". In it, we see the generations of the heavens and earth, the generations of Adam and his sons, the generations of Noah and his sons, and so on. Matthew starts just like Genesis, except, this is the generation of Jesus Christ. However, Matthew is not so much representing Jesus as a NEW generation into a new birth, but rather, Matthew is showing Jesus coming from the lineage of David and Abraham, and thus, is showing Jesus as the COMPLETION of the generations of the Old Testament. This is why the key men that Jesus Christ's lineage comes through are Abraham and David. Abraham is the father of Israel and the Jews, and David was the greatest king of Israel and the Jews. God made special covenants with both Abraham and David. He told Abraham that through HIS SEED all the nations and families of the earth would be blessed (Gen 12 & 22). And he told David that HIS SEED (his SON) would have an everlasting kingdom, an everlasting throne, and would build God's house (2 Samuel 7). Matthew is showing Jesus Christ to be the SEED promised to both Abraham and David. This is the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, and the son of Abraham.
2. **The completing book of the Old Testament.** I know in our Bible Matthew is found in the New Testament, but Matthew (also named Levi and probably of the tribe of the Levites) really wrote this book to be a COMPLETION to the Old Testament. Matthew shows twice as many Old Testament prophecies being fulfilled in his gospel in comparison with any of the other gospel accounts. Over and over, this book shows Jesus as the Christ fulfilling what was prophesied in the Old Testament. Matthew records Jesus' statement, "Think not that I am come to destroy the law and the prophets; I came not to destroy, but to fulfil." Only Matthew records this statement by Christ, and this is a KEY THEME throughout his book. Consider this, there are 39 books in the Old Testament. 39 is incomplete. Matthew is the 40th book of the Bible. 40 is a complete number in the scriptures for a trial, a test, judgment, and giving of God's word; and notice how Matthew completes the Old Testament in terms of ALL of these things as relating to Israel. One other important thing that God was trying to do through this book, was take the Jews back to their roots. Israel got lifted up with all the blessings and promotion God had given them: A kingdom, the priesthood, the Temple, the sacrifices, etc. But God was trying to show them that BEFORE they had ANY of those things, Israel started with a simple man named Abraham who truly just believed God and did whatever God told him to do. Before they had the great WRITTEN SCRIPTURES, God used angels and dreams to speak to Abraham and the prophets, and they just obeyed God. We see this in the man Joseph (Jesus' step-father) in the beginning of the book. This is also why throughout Matthew it doesn't say "that it might be fulfilled which was written in the scriptures", but rather, it says "that it might be fulfilled which was

spoken by the prophet(s)". The emphasis in Matthew is back to the roots of true Judaism! Before it was written, it was spoken. Before there were sacrifices required, obedience was required. Before there were works of the law, there was a heart of faith. Before there was a temple, there were men who wandered with no home but loved God with all their hearts no matter where he led them (even if he sent them to the ends of the earth). Before Israel had a land, their forefathers had God WITH THEM (even unto the end of the world).

3. **The gospel of the kingdom of heaven.** Jesus Christ first and foremost came unto HIS OWN (Israel). He came as the King of the Jews to offer them the kingdom promised them in the Old Testament. That is why we see Jesus commissioning his 12 apostles and specifically telling them to NOT go to the Gentiles or Samaritans, but to go only to "the lost sheep of the house of Israel" (found ONLY in MATTHEW). They were to go and preach that "the kingdom of heaven is at hand." The phrase "the kingdom of heaven" is found only in Matthew and it is found 33 times! (Jesus lived on this earth for 33 years.) Matthew shows Jesus (the King) truly offering the kingdom of heaven to Israel. Now, just to clarify: The kingdom of heaven is NOT the exact same as the kingdom of God. The kingdom of heaven is a subset of the kingdom of God, but it is not the same. They may appear to be the same in comparing some passages. However, if you study them carefully you will see areas where they are incompatible. This is because the "Kingdom of Heaven" is the kingdom promised to the Jews where Israel would be the head of nations over the entire earth and the Messiah would be their King. This is the kingdom come down OUT of HEAVEN to earth. Thus, as you study through Matthew, remember that you are reading kingdom of heaven truths which will ultimately be fulfilled in Christ's 1,000 year reign on THIS EARTH after he returns (which is also BEFORE the final judgment and BEFORE the new heaven and new earth are revealed; Revelation 20). The "kingdom of God" is God's eternal kingdom that has been since before the beginning of creation and lasts for ever and ever. We will finally get to enter into it in its fullness AFTER the final judgment when the new heaven and new earth are revealed (Revelation 21). Matthew shows John the Baptist preparing the way for the kingdom of heaven to Israel, and then Jesus coming and offering it. Ultimately, Matthew shows the nation of Israel rejecting their king as they try to take the kingdom of heaven violently by force for themselves. In the end, that generation receives neither their king nor the kingdom. You can see these truths in the following texts which also are ONLY RECORDED in MATTHEW (11:12; 23:34-36, 27:25).
4. **A prophetic book showing God's shift from Israel to the Gentiles.** Even though this book is clearly Jewish, and even though it is written as a completion of the Old Testament, this book also is VERY prophetic in revealing that Israel would not RECEIVE their Messiah and that Christ would build HIS CHURCH on HIMSELF (and the Gentiles would be grafted in). This is clearly revealed in MANY instances throughout this book. For instance, Matthew and Luke are the only books that include genealogies of Christ's lineage (Matthew showing Joseph's line and Luke showing Mary's line). But Matthew includes 3 non-Jewish women in this lineage

(Thamar, Rachab, and Ruth) hinting at the fact that the Gentiles will get in. Then in chapter 2, we see Herod (the king of Judea) and the chief priests and scribes (those in charge of the Temple and worship) had NO CLUE that Messiah had been born, but it was “wise men” from the east that knew. Also, Herod and the others had NO DESIRE to go find the Messiah and worship him, but the men from the east (non-Jews) went to worship him! In chapter 8, the greatest faith that Jesus found in Israel was a man that was NOT JEWISH; he was a Roman Centurion! And Christ prophesied that many from the east and west would enter the kingdom while “the children of the kingdom” (the flesh-and-blood Israelites) would be cast out into outer darkness. Christ prophesies that HIS CHURCH will be built on the faith of those who come to truly believe that he is THE CHRIST, the SON of the LIVING GOD. And that is why at the end of the book we see Jesus sending his apostles to go and teach ALL NATIONS the truth of the ONE TRUE GOD (Father, Son, and Holy Ghost) and EVERYTHING that he commanded.

## II. Overview Outline

- |  |                 |
|--|-----------------|
| A. Leading up to Jesus' Ministry                                 | Ch 1-3          |
| 1. Lineage & Birth   | - 1             |
| 2. Early Childhood   | - 2             |
| 3. John & Baptism  | - 3             |
| B. Jesus' Early Ministry (Rise to Popularity)                    | Ch 4-9          |
| 1. Temptations, Preaching, Gathering Disciples, & Healing.       | - 4             |
| 2. Sermon on the Mount (Instruction of kingdom of heaven)        | - 5-7           |
| 3. Journeys, Teaching, & Healing                                 | - 8-9           |
| C. Jesus' Ministry Continued (Unbelief & Rejection)              | Ch 10-20        |
| 1. Call & Commission of 12 Apostles                              | - 10            |
| 2. Confronting confusion & unbelief                              | - 11-12         |
| 3. Mystery Parables Discourse                                    | - 13            |
| 4. Confronting more confusion & unbelief                         | - 14-20         |
| D. Jesus' final Week in Jerusalem                                | Ch 21-27        |
| 1. Triumphal Entry & last words with his enemies                 | - 21-23         |
| 2. Last words & time with his disciples                          | - 24- 26:56     |
| 3. Arrest, Trial, Conviction, Crucifixion, & Burial              | - 26:57 - 27:66 |
| E. Jesus' Resurrection & Commission                              | Ch 28           |
| • Empty Tomb, Appearances, Bribery of Soldiers, Great Commission |                 |

## III. Keys

- A. Key Characters:
- Jesus Christ, Joseph, Mary, Herod the king (known as “Herod the great”), the wise men, John the Baptist, the devil, Simon Peter, the disciples, the chief priests, the



scribes, the Pharisees, the Sadducees, Herod the tetrarch, Judas Iscariot, Caiaphas, Pontius Pilate,

B. Key Words/Phrases:

- Jesus, Lord, Father, heaven, earth, kingdom, kingdom of heaven, hand, fulfilled, spoken, prophet(s), disciples, hear(d), parable(s), two, done, time, then, behold, good, brother, Pharisees, Galilee,

C. Key Verses:

1. 1:1; Setting the stage for the book.
2. 1:21; The true mission of the Messiah.
3. 3:2, 4:17; The message of the King.
4. 3:13, 5:17; The fulfillment required.
5. 5:3-12; The blessings of the King.
6. 7:21-23; The reality of judgment day.
7. 7:28-29; The authority of the King's doctrine.
8. 10:5-8; The sending of the apostles.
9. 13:10-17; The purpose of Parables.
10. 16:13-18; The revelation of the Christ & his church.
11. 18:15-20; The brotherhood & authority of the church.
12. 23:8-12; The titles of the kingdom.
13. 23:32-36; The damnation of the children of the kingdom.
14. 23:37-39; The heart of God concerning Jerusalem.
15. 27:24-25; The blood on Israel's hands and their children.
16. 27:50-54; The power of Christ's death & resurrection!
17. 28:18-20; The power and commission of Christ!

D. Key Numbers in Matthew: 2 & 3

Number 2:

1. Herod killed all the children age 2 and under (2:16)
2. Jesus calls 2 sets of 2 brothers to follow him (4:18,21)
3. Cannot serve 2 masters... (6:24)
4. Jesus casts out devils of 2 men dwelling in tombs. (8:28)
5. Jesus heals 2 blind men (9:27-31)

Number 3:

1. The genealogy is divided into 3 groups of 14 names. (1:17)
2. 3 angel appearances in dreams to Joseph (1:20, 2:13, 2:19)
3. 3 gifts offered to Jesus (2:11)
4. 3 Temptations in wilderness (4:1-11)
5. 3 main functions of Christ's ministry (4:23)
6. 3 godly things to be done in secret: alms, prayer, fasting (6:1-18)
7. 3 degrees of earnestness in prayer: Ask, Seek, Knock (7:7-8)
8. 3 contrasts: strait & wide, good & evil, wise & foolish (7:13-27)

9. 3 healing miracles: leprosy, palsy, fever (8:1-15)
  - \* *There are many other 2's and 3's in Matthew, these are just a few to get you started on your search for them.*

#### IV. Other Good Stuff

##### A. List of Jesus' Major Messages in Matthew:

1. Sermon on the Mount (5-7)
  - The doctrines, righteousness, and ways of the kingdom of heaven
2. Sending forth the 12 into apostolic ministry (10)
  - The commission, empowering, and guidance of the 12.
3. Mystery Parables Discourse (13)
  - 8 Parables of the kingdom of heaven revealing the nature, growth, and culmination of it.
4. Heart & Conduct of the brotherhood (18)
  - The humility, purity, love, discipline, and forgiveness of the brethren.
5. Denunciation of the Pharisees (23)
  - Jesus blasts the Pharisees and Scribes in just about every way possible and warns of their damnation.
6. End-Times Prophecies (24-25)
  - Jesus opens up the signs, the preparations needed, and the judgment seat of his return to earth.

##### B. List of the Blessings (also known as the "Beatitudes" - 5:1-12)

1. The poor in spirit ——> (will receive) the kingdom of heaven.
2. They that mourn ——> shall be comforted.
3. The meek ——> shall Inherit the earth.
4. They that hunger & thirst after righteousness ——> shall be filled.
5. The merciful ——> shall obtain mercy.
6. The pure in heart ——> shall see God.
7. The peacemakers ——> shall be called the children of God.
8. Those persecuted for righteousness sake ——> kingdom of heaven.
9. Those persecuted for Christ's sake ——> great reward in heaven.

##### C. List of the Parables found in Matthew:

1. The Salt of the Earth (5:13)
2. The Light of the World (5:14-16)
3. Good & Evil Fruits (7:15-20)
4. The Wise and Foolish Builders (7:24-27)
5. Children of the Bridechamber (9:15)
6. New Cloth on an Old Garment (9:16)
7. New Wine Into Old Bottles (9:17)

8. The Divided House (12:25-30)
9. The Sower & 4 Results (13:3-9,18-23)
10. The Wheat and the Tares (13:24-30, 36-43)
11. The Mustard Seed (13:31-32)
12. The Leaven (13:33)
13. The Hidden Treasure in the Field (13:44)
14. The Pearl of Great Price (13:45-46)
15. The Net Drawing in the Fish (13:47-50)
16. The Householder (13:52)
17. Entering in vs Coming Out (15:10-20)
18. The Lost Sheep (18:10-14)
19. The Unforgiving Servant (18:23-35)
20. The Hiring of Labourers in the Vineyard (20:1-16)
21. The Two Sons (21:28-32)
22. The Wicked Husbandman (21:33-45)
23. The Marriage Feast (22:1-14)
24. The Budding Fig Tree (24:32-35)
25. The Faithful Servant (24:42-51)
26. The Ten Virgins (25:1-13)
27. The Servants & Talents (25:14-30)
28. His Sheep and the Goats (25:31-33)

D. Matthew is the 40th book of the Bible. Interesting 40's in the word:

1. Judgment of Flood Rained 40 days and 40 nights.
2. Isaac 40 years old when he married Rebekah.
3. Moses spent 40 yrs in Egypt before leaving the world's system, then 40 yrs in Midian being prepared for ministry, and then 40 yrs leading Israel.
4. Moses spent 40 days in the Mount receiving the law from God. (2x)
5. The Spies spied out the land for 40 days before refusing God's rest.
6. Israel was fed Manna from heaven for 40 years before God brought them into the land.
7. Old generation had to wander for 40 years in wilderness and die for their unbelief and sins.
8. Eli, Saul, David, Solomon, & Joash each ruled for 40 years.
9. Elijah fasted for 40 days and 40 nights on trek to Mt Horeb.
10. Jesus fasted and faced temptation for 40 days and 40 nights.
11. Jesus taught his 11 true apostles for 40 days AFTER his resurrection.
12. Psalm 40 is a great prophetic picture of Christ in relation to his work and purpose as revealed in Matthew.
13. Isaiah 40 is a good parallel to Matthew and the beginning of the NT.

14. Ezekiel 40 begins God's revelation to Ezekiel of the Temple of the Lord, and in Matthew, God begins to reveal the Church of Jesus Christ!

V. Unique to Matthew: The following are found ONLY in Matthew

A. Narrative Accounts:

1. Birth & early childhood (1:18-25, 2:1-23)
2. Peter walks on water (14:28-33)
3. Judas' remorse, suicide, purchase of Field of Blood (27:3-10)
4. Dream of Pilate's wife (27:19)
5. Pilate washes his hands (27:24-25)
6. Resurrection of many saints (27:52-53)
7. Guarding of Jesus' tomb (27:62-66)
8. Bribery of guards to ensure their silence (28:11-15)
9. Resurrection appearance to eleven in the mountain (28:16-20)

B. Parables:

1. The wheat and the tares (13:24-30, 36-43)
2. Hidden treasure in the field (13:44)
3. Pearl of great price (13:45-46)
4. The net drawing in the fish (13:47-50)
5. The unforgiving servant (18:23-35)
6. The hiring of laborers in the vineyard (20:1-16)
7. The two sons (21:28-32)
8. The ten virgins (25:1-13)
9. His sheep and the goats (25:31-33)

C. Teachings:

1. Beatitudes on meek, merciful, pure in heart, peacemakers (5:5-9)
2. On fulfillment of the law and prophets (5:17-20)
3. Against anger toward brother (5:21-24)
4. Against oaths (5:33-37)
5. Against hypocrisy in almsgiving and prayer (6:1-8)
6. Against hypocrisy in fasting (6:16-18)
7. [To disciples] Go not to Gentiles and Samaritans but to "lost sheep of Israel" (10:5-7)
8. The persecution to come (10:17-23)
9. "Come to me all who labor . . . for my yoke is easy, my burden light" (11:28)
10. The blessing and prophecy of Peter and the church of Christ (16:17-19)
11. Full Denunciation of scribes and Pharisees (23:1-36)
12. Christ's judgment of all nations (25:31-46)
13. Instruction to the eleven to teach and baptize (28:16-20)

## **Mark - “Hammer”**

**Written around A.D. 50**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: Mark is such a power book. It is the shortest of all the gospel accounts, and yet in some ways, it is the most explosive. Mark is action packed and shows Jesus as the humble Son of Man working, serving, and ministering to others during his short life on earth. It shows Jesus bringing the kingdom of God in power to Israel through the anointing of the Holy Ghost. It ends with the great commission to go into all the world and preach the gospel to every creature with signs & wonders to follow.
- B. Authorship: Written by John-Mark the evangelist. Some things to consider regarding John-Mark and this gospel account:
  - 1. John-Mark was NOT one of the original twelve apostles (nor does it appear he ever became an apostle). It appears he may have been Barnabas' nephew (Colossians 4:10). He worked with Paul and Barnabas on their first missionary journey but had to depart prematurely back to Jerusalem for some unknown reason. Due to this, later on his presence caused a split between Paul and Barnabas. Barnabas continued to work with Mark moving forward (we're not sure for how long). Later, it appears that Mark might have been assistant to Peter in some of his work in Babylon. And even later on, Paul requests Timothy to bring Mark to assist him in the ministry. So clearly Mark had MUCH time with many apostles of the early church, and he was obviously anointed and gifted by the Holy Ghost to do the work of the Lord.
  - 2. Mark clearly was both an assistant (servant) and a preacher. He was obviously a man that was direct and to the point. We can see all of these things coming out in his writing. Mark definitely writes like a preacher. He is both direct AND expressive in his stories. You can CLEARLY see this when you compare stories that are in Matthew, Mark, and Luke. You will see how expressive Mark is in details of the stories that the others don't even consider (as they are more informational). The book of Mark may be the greatest and easiest story to read through in all of the New Testament.
- C. Audience: Common men and women (both believers and unbelievers)
  - 1. Many say that Mark was written to a Roman audience. I cannot prove this. From reading Mark and paying attention to his style of writing, I tend to believe that Mark was written for the average common man. I believe Mark wrote a short, simple, powerful book both to be used as an evangelistic tool to bring common men to faith in Christ, and also to be an edifying tool to strengthen the faith, hope, and endurance of men and women who are already believers in Jesus Christ. This book is designed to take believers in Christ and inspire them to get to the work of the gospel and lay down their lives to serve others in need. This book is the common man's gospel in my opinion (whether Jew or Gentile, believer or unbeliever, male or female), and it is a GREAT evangelistic tool for the common man to come to faith in Jesus as the Son of God.

D. Analysis:

1. **The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ.** Matthew was written more as a completing book of the Old Testament showing Christ fulfilling the law and prophets while bringing in the new. Mark however, is written purely as a New Testament account of Jesus Christ as the Son of God. This is the gospel that we believe and preach. While Matthew and Mark look at a lot of the same things, Mark has a different focus towards these things in showing Jesus as the undeniable Son of God marching forward into the New. This is why Mark focuses on “the kingdom of God” throughout. The kingdom of God is what Jesus opened up to his disciples for 40 days AFTER his resurrection and is what the Church is to carry forward (see Paul at the end of Acts...). The kingdom of God is not meat and drink, but it is spiritual. The kingdom of God cannot be taken by force, this is God’s eternal kingdom, and only those who come by repentance and humility may enter in. That is why these key themes of repentance, humility, action-faith, and the kingdom of God are focused on in Mark. These are the key first principles of the doctrine of Christ in the New Testament.
2. **A book of Action!** Mark doesn’t waste time with background information, he gets right to the action. This is a book all about Christ being a man of action and fulfilling the Father’s will by DOING the work. Mark is the shortest gospel, but contains about just as many miracles of Jesus as Luke and Matthew (which are much longer)! In Mark, Jesus is shown more as a preacher (direct and to the point), a healer, and one with all power over devils and the kingdom of darkness. There are only 2 long teachings by Christ in this entire book (and the 2nd one is more of an intense warning by Christ than an instructional teaching). Jesus is not portrayed as a great teacher here (like in the other gospels), but as a PREACHER of constant ACTION with signs, wonders, and miracles accompanying his work. Mark is all about the WORK of Christ.
3. **A book of Christ as a Prophet and servant.** Throughout Mark, Jesus is seen serving and working. This is the mark of a servant. Also, Jesus is seen speaking and operating as a prophet. In the Old Testament (for the most part), genealogies are not given for prophets. Prophets are not given great honor. Prophets often show up out of nowhere, deliver their short, direct messages, (sometimes accompanied by a miraculous sign) and then move on. This is the exact portrayal of Christ throughout Mark.

## II. Overview Outline

- |  |                |
|--|----------------|
| A. Leading up to Jesus’ Ministry   | Ch 1:1-13      |
| 1. John & Baptism  | - 1:2-11       |
| 2. Temptation in Wilderness  | - 1:12-13      |
| B. Jesus’ Ministry in the North (Galilee region)                                     | Ch 1:14 - 9:50 |
| 1. Preaching, Gathering Disciples, Healing, Casting out devils, and Correcting Error | - 1:14 - 3:35  |
| 2. Mystery Parables Discourse  | - 4:1-34       |

- |    |   |                 |
|----|---|-----------------|
| 3. | More Signs, Miracles, and Correcting Error    | - 4:35 - 9:50   |
| C. | Jesus in Judea heading to Jerusalem           | Ch 10           |
| 1. | More Truth                                    | - 10:1-45       |
| 2. | Healing Blind Bartimaeus                      | - 10:46-52      |
| D. | Jesus' final Week in Jerusalem                | Ch 11-15        |
| 1. | Triumphal Entry & last words with his enemies | - 11-12         |
| 2. | Last words & time with his disciples          | - 13 - 14:42    |
| 3. | Trial, Conviction, Crucifixion, & Burial      | - 14:43 - 15:47 |
| E. | Jesus' Resurrection & Commission              | Ch 16           |

### III. Keys

- A. Key Characters:
  - Jesus Christ, John the Baptist, Simon Peter, James, John, the disciples, the Pharisees, the scribes, the chief priests, Satan (the devil), Judas Iscariot, Pilate, Mary, Mary Magdalene.
- B. Key Words/Phrases:
  - Jesus, disciples, straightway, immediately, hear(d), kingdom of God, cast, many, spirit, devils, multitude, cried, sick, preach(ed), way
- C. Key Verses:
  1. 1:15; The straightforward message.
  2. 6:56; Christ's healing power.
  3. 7:6-9,13; The corruption of religious traditions.
  4. 8:34-38; The cost of following Christ & value of the soul.
  5. 10:43-45; The servanthood of Christ and his followers.
  6. 13:35-37; Command to watch.
  7. 14:62; Christ's confession & declaration.
  8. 16:15-16; Commission to preach gospel to all.

### IV. Other Good Stuff

- A. Fascinating Studies:
  1. Comparing Jesus' temptation with Adam's temptation
  2. Jesus' encounters and power over devils & unclean spirits in Mark.
  3. The healing of the man with palsy (considering Galatians 6:1-2)
  4. Comparing the lists of the 12 as found in Matthew, Mark, & Luke and what can be implied by these lists.
  5. The blasphemy of the Holy Ghost
  6. Comparing the parable of the sower and 4 types of soil with Mat & Luke.
  7. The parable of the seed growing up of itself until harvest.
  8. The power of man's traditions
  9. The 2 different feedings, the baskets of fragments, and what they picture

10. The value and cost of a human soul.
11. Christ's warning of hell in chapter 9.
12. The salt and the fire in 9:49-50.
13. The loosing of the colt and the triumphal entry.
14. Jesus' questions and answers to the Pharisees and scribes.
15. The men that were close to the kingdom of God...
16. The widow and her 2 mites.
17. The inconsistencies of the false witnesses at Jesus' trial.

B. List of the Parables found in Mark:

1. Children of the Bridechamber (2:19-20)
2. New Cloth on an Old Garment (2:21)
3. New Wine Into Old Bottles (2:22)
4. The Strong Man (3:23-27)
5. The Sower & 4 results (4:3-8, 14-20)
6. The Candle (4:21-23)
7. \*The Seed that Grows Itself (4:26-29)
8. The Mustard Seed (4:30-32)
9. Entering in vs Coming Out (7:14-23)
10. Fire & Salt (Mk 9:49-50)
11. The Wicked Husbandmen (12:1-9)
12. The Fig Tree (Mk 13:28-31)

\* *Found only in Mark*

C. List of the Miracles of Christ found in Mark:

1. The Man with an Unclean Spirit (1:23-26; cf. Luke 4:33-35)
2. Healing Simon's Mother-in-law (1:30-31; cf. Luke 4:38-39)
3. Heals MANY sick and casts out MANY devils (1:32-34; cf. Mat 8:16-17; Luke 4:40-41)
4. Healing a Leper (1:40-45; cf. Mat 8:2-4; Luke 5:12-14)
5. Healing Palsy (2:1-12; cf. Mat 9:2-8; Luke 5:17-26)
6. The Withered Hand (3:1-6; cf. Mat 12:9-14; Luke 6:6-11)
7. Calming the Storm (4:35-41; cf. Mat 8:23-27; Luke 8:22-25)
8. The Gadarene Demoniac (5:1-20; cf. Mat 8:28-34; Luke 8:26-39)
9. The Woman with Issue of Blood (5:25-34; cf. Mat 9:20-22; Luke 8:43-48)
10. The Daughter of Jairus (5:21-43; cf. Mat 9:18-26; Luke 8:40-56)
11. Feeding the 5,000 (6:30-46; cf. Mat 14:13-23; Luke 9:10-17; Jn 6:1-15)
12. Jesus Walking on the Water (6:47-56; cf. Mat 14:24-36; John 6:16-21)
13. Heals MANY sick in Gennesaret (6:53-56; cf. Mat 14:34-36)
14. Syrophenician Woman's Daughter (7:24-30; cf. Mat 15:21-28)
15. \*Deaf and Dumb Man (7:31-37)



16. Feeding the 4,000 (8:1-9; cf. Mat 15:32-38)
  17. \*The Blind Man Near Bethsaida (8:22-26)
  18. The Demoniac Boy (9:14-29; cf. Mat 17:14-20; Luke 9:37-43)
  19. The Blind Men Near Jericho (10:46-52; cf. Mat 20:29-34; Luke 18:35-43)
  20. The Withered Fig Tree (11:20-25; cf. Mat 21:20-22)
- \* *Found only in Mark*

## **Luke - “Giving Light”**

**Written around A.D. 60**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: Luke wrote this book to confirm the authenticity of the gospel. This is the longest gospel account. It has the most detailed account of Christ's birth and lineage. It has many long teachings by Jesus. It shows Jesus as the wisest man ever to live in dealing with people (the Greeks seek after wisdom). He reveals Jesus as the greatest spiritual doctor in piercing through to men's hearts using proper judgment (not according to appearance). Therefore, the grace of Christ is ministered to the humble and wounded, while the proud and self-righteous miss his grace and await his wrath.
- B. Authorship: Written by Luke the evangelist. Some things to consider regarding Luke and this gospel account:
  1. Luke was not one of the original 12 apostles (nor does it appear that he even was an apostle). However, Luke spent a considerable amount of time with Paul on his 2nd and 3rd missionary journeys (as found in Acts). Paul received personal revelation and instruction by Jesus Christ himself, and so clearly Luke learned a lot about Christ through Paul. And evidently, (based on Luke's statements in the introduction of his gospel account) Luke spent much time with some or most of the original disciples that were eyewitnesses of Jesus' ministry from the beginning.
  2. Luke was a physician (a medical doctor), and thus, had an excellent mind towards understanding, examination, analysis, and records. This clearly comes through in this gospel account. We clearly see that Luke cared about individuals and their heart condition. Luke clearly became a “spiritual doctor” so to speak as he is able to open up the hearts of men and show how Jesus truly was the great physician to heal, bind up, and restore the hearts and souls of men. Also, being a physician that was good at examination and keeping accurate and orderly records, we see how even though Luke was not one of the original 12 apostles, he still was able to accurately compile an intelligent, orderly, and compelling account of the story behind the birth, the birth itself, and then the life, ministry, death, burial, and resurrection of Jesus Christ.

C. Audience: This gospel account was written directly to a man by the name of Theophilus.

1. From the introduction and the revelation that Luke lays out in both Luke and Acts, it appears very clear that Theophilus was a Gentile, a well-educated man, and most likely (from the honorary title Luke addresses him as) a high ranking Roman government official. Theophilus had evidently been taught some things about Jesus Christ and his doctrine. Luke obviously had some kind of relationship with Theophilus. And Luke, led by the Holy Ghost, saw the need to write a 2-part document (Luke & Acts) to give Theophilus a thorough account in order to confirm and seal the faith of this man in Jesus Christ.
2. Clearly, this book was not only written for Theophilus. The Holy Ghost had Luke write this thorough account to be copied and distributed throughout the world to turn men's hearts to faith in Jesus Christ and to confirm the weak faith of new believers. "Theophilus" means "loved by God". And so ultimately, this book really targets Gentiles that are well-educated who either already believe in Christ or are still examining the facts to come to a conclusion about Jesus.

D. Analysis:

1. **An orderly declaration of the gospel.** As we discussed above, Luke was not one of the original 12 apostles, but Luke did spend a considerable amount of time with Paul and with some or most of the original disciples that were eyewitnesses of Jesus' ministry from the beginning. As a physician (doctor) that became a disciple of Jesus Christ, the Lord Jesus clearly directed him to set an orderly, sound historical record of the story behind Jesus Christ's birth, his ministry, death, burial, and resurrection. Luke writes in a sound, factual manner to build an irrefutable case for the certainty of our faith. And yet, Luke's writing is not always chronological. It appears that Luke's goal was to layer the facts and stories in a generally chronological order with the liberty to tell the stories in order of meaning and significance.
2. **A certain account of Christ Jesus for learned men.** Many men have read the Bible to disprove it only to find out that it is ABSOLUTELY TRUE. Such is the case with the book of Luke. A well-known atheist journalist by the name of Lee Strobel sought to disprove the story of Christ by analyzing Luke's gospel. He figured that he could pick apart Luke's book as a mere book of fables. What he found was the complete opposite. He found the book of Luke to be an extremely well laid out and historically verifiable document of the highest standard! In the end, Lee Strobel ended up being converted to faith in Jesus Christ after carefully examining the "certainty" of Luke's account of Jesus Christ. Luke wrote this book to be "certain" to reveal the certain fact that Jesus is the perfect man. By proving Christ to be perfect in wisdom and judgment, he is proving Jesus to be the Christ, the Son of God.
3. **A sword to pierce through souls to reveal the thoughts of the heart.** This gospel of Luke truly opens up the hearts of men and reveals the hidden intentions and motives of the heart. Remember, Luke was a physician, and thus, he had to have probing insight to get to the root problems and causes of things. "Luke" means "giving light", and truly this book gives light into the deep, dark areas of the

heart. Throughout the book of Luke we see God resisting the proud (no matter how great they appear outwardly) and God giving grace to the humble and broken (no matter what their social standing is). This is a book that reveals both man's heart and God's heart towards man. This is why we see God rejecting those who are prideful & full of themselves and God embracing and bestowing abundant pardon & grace on those who have no trust in themselves but their only hope is in the Lord. This book truly is a book of righteous judgment to show where God draws the line between who HE will justify and who HE will condemn. Christ searches the hearts and knows our thoughts & intentions, and he will draw the line.

4. **An evangelistic book.** No other book shows Christ winning back so many of the lost sheep of the house of Israel. This book really shows Jesus working in small intimate groups winning people's hearts to him more than any other gospel account. The theme throughout Luke is certainly the ninety-nine being left behind to find the one lost sheep.

## II. Overview Outline

- |  |                 |
|--|-----------------|
| A. Introduction  | Ch 1:1-4        |
| B. Miraculous Births of John & Jesus   | Ch 1:5 - 2:52   |
| • Stories behind their births, Jesus' circumcision & presentation in temple, and story of Jesus as a young boy in Jerusalem. |                 |
| C. Leading up to Jesus' Ministry   | Ch 3 - 4:13     |
| 1. John's Ministry   | - 3:1-22        |
| 2. Jesus' Genealogy  | - 3:23-38       |
| 3. Jesus' Temptation   | - 4:1-13        |
| D. Jesus' Ministry in the North (Galilee region)   | Ch 4:14 - 9:50  |
| • Preaching, Teaching, Healing, Calling Disciples, Showing Mercy, etc.   |                 |
| E. Jesus Journey to Jerusalem  | Ch 9:51 - 19:27 |
| • Line being drawn between disciples & enemies (instruction, parables, interaction, warnings, etc.)                          |                 |
| F. Jesus' final Week in Jerusalem  | Ch 19:28 -23:56 |
| 1. Triumphal Entry & last words with his enemies   | - 19:28 - 20:47 |
| 2. Last words & time with his disciples  | - 21:1 - 22:46  |
| 3. Arrest, Trial, Conviction, Crucifixion, & Burial  | - 22:47 - 23:56 |
| G. Jesus' Resurrection Appearances   | Ch 24           |
| • Empty tomb, Walk to Emmaus, Jesus Appears, Instructs & Ascends   |                 |

## III. Keys

- A. Key Characters:
  - Jesus, Gabriel, Zacharias, Elisabeth, Mary, Joseph, John the Baptist, Simeon, Anna, Pontius Pilate, Herod the tetrarch, the devil (Satan), Simon Peter, James,

John, the disciples, the Pharisees, the scribes, Simon the Pharisee, Mary Magdalene, Zacchaeus, Judas Iscariot, Joseph of Arimathaea, Cleopas,

B. Key Words/Phrases:

- Lord, God, Jesus, father, son, certain, days, child, written, shew(ed), kingdom of God, hear(d), heart(s), pray(ed)(er), way, good, city, Jerusalem

C. Key Verses:

1. 2:52; Christ's growth and development.
2. 4:18-19; Christ's anointing and ministry.
3. 10:21-22; the Son and the Father.
4. 11:27-28; the true blessing of God.
5. 12:49-53; Christ the divider.
6. 14:26-27; the cost of discipleship.
7. 15:7; the theme of Luke.
8. 16:15; God's view compared to man's view.
9. 17:20-21; The true kingdom of God.
10. 23:34; The heart of Christ on the cross.
11. 23:42-43; The last-second grace of God.
12. 24:32,45-47; The scriptures reveal Christ.

#### IV. Other Good Stuff

A. Fascinating Studies:

1. The 2 visitations & messages of Gabriel. (1)
2. Mary's praise to God with Elisabeth. (1)
3. Zacharias' Prophecy after John is born. (1)
4. Christ's birth and shepherds & significance. (2)
5. Simeon and Anna the prophetess. (2)
6. Jesus in temple at 12 years old. (2)
7. John's baptism in relation to Matthew 25:31-46
8. Comparing Jesus' temptation in Luke 4 and Matthew 4
9. Jesus in his hometown synagogue and their response. (4)
10. Similarities and differences between Sermon on the Plain (Luke 6) and Sermon on the Mount (Matthew 5-7)
11. All the personal witnesses/discussions of Jesus in Luke
12. All the people that find grace from the Lord who don't deserve it compared with all the people who think they deserve something but miss out (both real and parables).
13. Martha and Mary (flesh & spirit, works & faith, law & grace, etc.) (10)
14. Jesus' rebuke to the Pharisees and lawyers. (end of 11)
15. Luke 12!
16. The prodigal son, the loving Father, and the disgruntled brother. (15)

17. The days of the Son of man like the days of Lot & Sodom. (17)
18. Jesus silencing his adversaries. (20)
19. Christ on the cross with the 2 thieves. (23)
20. Jesus joining the 2 disciples on the road to Emmaus. (24)
21. Jesus' appearance to the disciples and final message (24)

V. **Unique to Luke:** Almost 60% of the material covered in Luke is unique to the book of Luke. There are many insights, stories, parables, and messages that are unique to Luke's gospel account. As you look at the things which are unique to Luke (especially the parables and stories) you really get a feel for what Luke's main themes are.

A. **Narrative Accounts:**

1. Gabriel Appears to Zacharias (1:5-25)
2. Gabriel Appears to Mary (1:26-38)
3. Mary visits Elizabeth (1:39-56)
4. Birth and naming of John (1:57-80)
5. Birth of Christ and angels and shepherds (2:1-20)
6. Circumcision and dedication in Temple w/Simeon & Anna (2:21-39)
7. Jesus' childhood and being found in the temple (2:40-52)
8. Jesus preaching in his hometown synagogue (4:16-30)
9. Jesus at Simon the Pharisee's house (7:36-50)
10. Jesus rejected by the Samaritans (9:51-56)
11. Jesus sending out the 70 and their report back (10:1-12,17-20)
12. Jesus at Martha's house (10:38-42)
13. Jesus and Zacchaeus (19:1-10)
14. Jesus brought before Pilate for the first time (23:1-7)
15. Jesus brought before Herod (23:7-12)
16. Jesus' road to the cross and the women following (23:27-34)
17. Jesus & the repentant thief (23:39-43)
18. The 2 disciples on the road to Emmaus with Jesus (24:13-35)
19. Jesus appears to disciples & opens their understanding (24:36-49)
20. Jesus' ascension & disciples return to Jerusalem (24:50-53)

B. **Miracles:**

1. Miraculous catch of fish (5:1-11)
2. Raising the widow of Nain's son (7:11-17)
3. Healing of woman with spirit of infirmity (13:10-17)
4. Healing of man with dropsy (14:1-6)
5. Healing of ten lepers (17:11-19)

C. **Parables:**

1. \*Good Samaritan (10:25-37)

2. Friend at midnight (11:5-8)
3. \*Barren fig tree (13:6-9)
4. Invitation to banquet, and places of honour (14:7-14)
5. Lost coin (15:8-10)
6. \*Prodigal son (15:11-32)
7. \*Unjust steward (16:1-9)
8. \*Rich man and Lazarus (16:19-31)
9. \*Unjust judge (18:1-8)
10. \*Pharisee and tax-collector (18:9-14)
11. \*Parable of the pounds (19:11-27)

*\* These parables are not fictional stories but TRUE stories.*

D. Teachings & Comments:

1. Proverb: physician heal yourself (4:23)
2. Faith of widow and of Namaan (4:25-30)
3. The woes (6:24-26)
4. Conversation with Moses and Elijah about his departure at transfiguration (9:31-32)
5. Second objection to immediately follow Jesus (9:61-62)
6. True blessedness (11:27-28)
7. True cleansing (11:37-41)
8. Repentance or destruction (13:1-5)
9. Who are in the kingdom? (13:22-30)
10. That fox Herod (13:31-33)
11. Two examples of counting the cost (14:28-33)
12. Covetous hypocrisy of Pharisees (16:14-15)
13. Unprofitable Servants (17:7-10)
14. Kingdom in midst of you (17:20-21)
15. Example of judgement on Sodom, Lot's wife (17:28-32)
16. Warning at end of Olivet discourse (21:34-36)
17. Eating Passover before suffering (22:15-16)

E. Luke is a book with some deep, powerful messages. These messages are worth studying, meditating on, and really seeking to understand them in a full way. Below is a list of some of the Powerful Messages in Luke that are NOT spoken by Jesus and are unique to Luke's gospel account:

1. Gabriel's Message to Zacharias (1:13-17)
2. Gabriel's Message to Mary (1:28-37)
3. Mary's Testimony to Elisabeth (1:46-55)
4. Zacharias' Prophecy after John is born (1:67-79)
5. Gabriel's Message to the Shepherds (2:10-14)
6. Simeon's Prayer & Message to Joseph & Mary (2:28-35)

## **John - “The Grace of Jehovah”**

**Written around A.D. 65**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: John is truly one of the most deep and profound books ever written. This book was written to show Jesus as the incarnation of God (the Word made flesh). It shows Jesus' deity more clearly than any other gospel. It shows him as the eternal Word and Light of God. Throughout the gospel it confirms his deity through his words and his works. Those who receive the truth of his words and works become sons of God and those who reject are left in darkness. John is unique from all other gospels as it is the only book that focuses quite a bit on Jesus' time spent in Jerusalem at the feast days throughout his 3-and-a-half year ministry. John also is the only gospel that reveals Jesus' private instruction to the 11 true apostles in the Upper room where he reveals truth about the Holy Ghost, our walk in him, and his Father in heaven. Ultimately, John wrote his gospel account so that anyone might come to faith in Jesus Christ and have eternal life through him.
- B. Authorship: Written by John the apostle (not John the Baptist). Some things to consider about John the apostle:
  - 1. John was one of the original 12 apostles hand-picked by Jesus Christ to accompany him during his ministry and to help lead the churches after his ascension. Of the 12 apostles, there were 3 that were the closest to Jesus that saw and experienced things that the other 9 did not get to be a part of. These 3 that formed the inner circle were Peter, James, and John. Of these 3, it appears from careful examination that John was the closest to Jesus. Here are a few of the reasons for thinking this: John was the one who was leaning on the Lord's bosom at the “Last Supper.” John was the only disciple who knew that Judas was the betrayer (Jesus only told him directly in the Upper Room). John was the only disciple who believed Jesus Christ was risen from the dead without having to see Jesus resurrected! Not one of the other disciples at that time (men or women) believed Jesus was risen from the dead until they personally saw him. John was the only one. When he entered into the empty tomb and saw the linen clothes lying on the ground and the napkin that was wrapped around his head all folded up properly by itself, he believed Jesus was alive. And also, John was the only apostle to receive the full revelation of the end-times, the millennial kingdom of Christ, the final judgment, and the new heaven and the new earth. He received this revelation from Jesus Christ himself and was commissioned to write the book of Revelation. So when you read John's writings, you are getting access to the same experiences, understanding, and revelation that John had as the closest disciple of Jesus Christ.
  - 2. John was a fisherman who was the son of a fisherman. John was also a disciple of John the Baptist. When Jesus called John to follow him, John left John the Baptist and his father behind (along with the family business) to follow Jesus. John was someone who clearly understood the move of God in his day and wanted to be a part of the will of God no matter what the cost. He was a good son to his father and would have helped take over the family business. However,

because of God's work, he left his earthly inheritance to follow Jesus. This is perhaps one of the reasons why the Lord gave John such revelation concerning the working of the Father and Son together and their will, plans, and purposes.

3. John never seemed to be the main leader. He always seemed to be a helper and companion. Because of this, it appears that John did not bear the responsibilities and burdens that accompany being the main leader. And thus, (as it appears it was his nature), he seemed to have more time to give to deep contemplative thought and meditation concerning the things of God. John was clearly a deep and profound thinker with deep understanding. He was a simple man as a fisherman, and so his writing is not very complex (like Paul's writings). His writing at the surface is quite simple (not technical and complex), but his writing is extremely deep, rich, and profound. This clearly was a result of the mind and heart that the Lord had given him.
- C. Audience: I would argue that this gospel account is written to the whole world so that anyone might come to faith in Jesus Christ. However, John also opens up profound revelation that is only for believers and disciples of Jesus Christ.
1. The world is lost and without God and without hope and headed for sure death, hell, and damnation on judgment day. They have absolutely NO HOPE to please God and be righteous in his eyes on judgment day on their own. So God made a way for anyone in the entire world to be reconciled to HIMSELF. And the way is Jesus Christ. Most Jews thought the Messiah was only coming to deliver them (the nation of Israel). And most Jews only thought he was coming to deliver them from all their outer enemies and problems. However, John reveals that Jesus came to deliver the entire world from their true problems: sin and unbelief in God. The only hope for the entire world is Jesus Christ and faith in him. He is the only way back to the Father in heaven.
  2. Anyone in the world who comes to faith in Christ through his words becomes one of God's sheep. God has many special things that he reveals only to his sheep. His sheep need to spend time at the feet of Jesus hearing his voice and continuing in his doctrine so that they might continue in his faith for fruitfulness and his glory.
- D. Analysis:
1. **So that you might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God.** John wrote this book for many purposes and to reveal many things. However, the primary reason why John wrote this firsthand account of the things that HE witnessed and saw, is so that anybody in the entire world could come to the same faith that he came to: that Jesus is the Christ (Messiah) and the very Son of God. John does this by showing BOTH Jesus' doctrine (his words) and HIS deeds (his works). Those who receive Jesus' words and works will come to this same faith. Those who reject Christ's words and works will be left in the darkness.
  2. **To reveal the true God.** John was the closest disciple to Christ and an excellent listener and follower. He was a deep thinker. God really revealed himself to John in such a profound AND personal way. This book of John truly reveals the Godhead (the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost) better and more completely



than ANY other book in the Bible. In Matthew, Christ is revealed through his kingdom. In Mark, Christ is revealed through his works. In Luke, Christ is revealed through his wisdom. In John, Christ (and the Father and the Holy Ghost) are revealed directly! In the other gospel accounts we really don't see Christ directly preaching about himself, the Father, or the Holy Ghost. He opens up things but more indirectly. In John, all 3 are revealed directly. Here Jesus is revealed not just as the Son of Man, the Son of David, the Christ (Messiah), the King of the Jews, the Redeemer, the Saviour, the Lamb of God, but he is revealed as the eternal Word of God! He is revealed as the Creator himself. He is revealed as the eternal Light of God: the very source of life for man. And ultimately, John reveals that the Word was made flesh (became a human being) and dwelt among us! And then ultimately through Jesus, the Father can be revealed to us! (Because Jesus is the only way to the Father.) And we see Jesus opening up truth about his Father that is not revealed so directly in any other book in the Bible. But the truth is that actually NO MAN could really know Jesus Christ (in terms of who he really is as the eternal One), except by the work and leading of the Holy Ghost! And so Jesus Christ reveals who the Holy Ghost is (also called the Spirit of God, the Spirit of Truth, and the Comforter) directly and what his primary work entails towards both the lost and the believer. John reveals the true God (Father, Word, and Holy Ghost) like NO OTHER book in the Bible.

3. **To reveal the light and expose the darkness.** One of the key themes throughout this book is light and darkness. In the beginning, God revealed light (by his word), and he saw that the light was GOOD, and THEN he divided the light from the darkness. Light and darkness have NOTHING in common. Darkness comes in many forms (political, relational, religious, spiritual, social, etc...). This book of John truly exposes the darkness of error, ignorance, sin, and unbelief. It exposes the devil's motives and his operations. It exposes religious hypocrisy even amongst "God's people". And it shows the truth that those who willingly do evil actually LOVE the darkness and HATE the light and will NOT come to the light. This book also reveals the light of God through the God-man Jesus Christ. He is revealed as both the Word and the Light. And both his words and his deeds reveal the light of God throughout this book from start to finish. This is why those who respond to the voice of God which calls men to repentance (a turning from willingly doing evil) BACK to doing God's will and following after a good conscience ultimately RECEIVE and LOVE Jesus Christ (the light of the world). Those who refuse to respond to God's message of repentance might follow Jesus for a while because of what they hope to gain from him, but ultimately, they will draw back into the darkness where they belong. Jesus came to reveal the light of life to man so that man may be saved; but ultimately, men must decide between either light or darkness.

## II. Overview Outline

### A. Introduction

Ch 1:1-18

- The Word, the Light, the Word made flesh

- B. Ministry of John the Baptist Ch 1:19-36 (& 3:23-36)
  - Preparing the way for the Lamb of God
- C. Early Ministry of Christ (Rise to Popularity) Ch 1:37 - 4:54
  - First disciples, first couple of miracles, first visit to Jerusalem & Samaria.
- D. Ministry of Controversy & Opposition Ch 5-12
  - Powerful miracles & revelation of Jesus as the Son of God to Israel.
- E. The Upper Room Ch 13-17
  - Amazing revelation of the Father & the Spirit to Christ's true disciples.
- F. Betrayal/Trial/Crucifixion & Burial Ch 18-19
- G. Jesus' Resurrection & Appearances Ch 20
  - John believes, Jesus appears to Mary, the 10, & then the 11 (w/Thomas)
- H. Bonus Chapter & Conclusion Ch 21
  - One last miracle, and disciples fellowship with Christ

### III. Keys

- A. Key Individuals:
  - Jesus (the Word, the Light), John the Baptist, the Pharisees, the (chief) priests, Andrew, John, Simon Peter, Philip, Thomas, Nathanael, the disciples, Nicodemus, Judas Iscariot, Mary Magdalene, Martha, Lazarus, Caiaphas, Pontius Pilate, Joseph of Arimathea.
- B. Key Words/Phrases:
  - Jesus, Father, God, Son, Lord, Christ, believe(d)(th), love(d)(th), life, light, truth, eternal, everlasting, Pharisees, Jews, feast, passover,
- C. Key Verses: *(I have not included any of the "I am" verses as I have listed all of them further down in section IV part A; I have also included no material from the Upper Room Discourse & Prayer as I have gone into more detail for those 2 passages in section IV parts D & E)*
  1. 1:12-14; Receiving HIM, new birth, and Word made flesh.
  2. 1:17; important theme of the book.
  3. 3:3-7; The new birth's necessity and nature.
  4. 3:16-21; Salvation & Condemnation.
  5. 4:21-24; the true worship of the Father.
  6. 5:22-24; the Father's work/honour passed to the Son.
  7. 5:39; the scriptures all point to Christ.
  8. 6:63; the nature and power Christ's words.
  9. 7:16-18; Christ's doctrine.
  10. 8:31-32; Where freedom comes from.
  11. 9:26-34; the blind man testifies and rebukes the Pharisees.
  12. 10:27-30; Christ & the Father's sheep and oneness.
  13. 12:32-37; Christ to draw all, but people must respond before too late.

14. 19:30; Christ finished it.
15. 20:30-31; The purpose of the book.
16. 21:15-17; Simon's restoration and charge.

IV. **Other Good Stuff:** 8 Seems to be a key number in the gospel of John (which makes sense because 8 is the number of "new beginning"). John opens up the truth that only through Christ (the Word who was in "the beginning") can we partake of the new birth (and have a new beginning). Below are a bunch of examples of the key 8's found in John:

- A. **8 "I am's" of Jesus Christ:** Jesus makes 8 very bold "I am" statements that John records. Each one is significant in terms of revealing who Jesus is and in terms of his relationship between man and the Father.
1. I am the bread of life (6:35,48,51)
    - complete sustenance and every thing we need for everlasting life.
  2. I am the light of the world (8:12; 9:5; 12:46)
    - perfect purity and truth to all who walk in this dark, corrupt world.
  3. I am (he) (John 8:24,28,58; 13:19)
    - he literally is the God of Abraham; he is Jehovah from the OT!
  4. I am the door (10:7,9)
    - the only way to enter into salvation, provision, and rest with God.
  5. I am the good shepherd (10:11,14)
    - the greatest Lord who knows and cares for his own through death unto life eternal.
  6. I am the resurrection and the life (11:26)
    - he is life eternal; absolute power over death (even in the flesh).
  7. I am the way, the truth, and the life (14:6)
    - the only way to be reconciled back to the Father; absolute truth in word and deed; life!
  8. I am the true vine (15:1,5)
    - he is the only way we can bring forth good fruit unto the Father.
- B. **8 Miracles of Jesus Christ:** Jesus is shown to perform 8 miracles in John's gospel (6 are unique to this gospel). These miracles are all true and literally happened. However, John is recording these miracles specifically because he is trying to show both the power that Christ has in these different ways and ALSO trying to reveal spiritual truths about Jesus and his work of salvation.
1. Water into wine at marriage feast (2:1-11)
    - He can turn the word (water) into joy of the Holy Ghost when you get filled up and then draw out to serve others.
  2. Healing the nobleman's son (4:46-54)
    - All it takes is faith in the word of Christ to see the impossible become possible. He doesn't even need to be present (in the flesh) to work.
  3. Raising the man who was impotent for 38 years to walk (5:1-17)

- His grace and power can raise you out of hopelessness even when you have lost all hope and faith.
- 4. Feeding the 5,000 in the wilderness (6:1-15)
  - He will provide for those who seek him and his word no matter where he leads you.
- 5. Walking on water & Immediately reaching the other side (6:16-21)
  - No matter what Satan or life throws at you, you are safe if you have been obedient to Jesus. And he will show up right when you need him the most.
- 6. Giving sight to the man blind since birth (9:1-14)
  - Even for those who have never seen the light, Jesus can open their eyes and change their lives so that they can SEE HIM!
- 7. Raising Lazarus from the dead after 4 days (11:38-45)
  - Death cannot hold or corrupt you if you are Jesus' friend; death cannot stop Jesus from working; we all shall rise again!
- 8. The catch of the 153 fish (21:1-14)
  - Without Jesus, we will win no souls; but at his word, we can bring in "great" multitudes!

C. **8 Teachings of Christ to the Lost:** Jesus is really shown opening up important spiritual truth about salvation and eternal life to the lost throughout the gospel of John. In each of these teachings Jesus uses some parables (& or metaphors) to really connect these spiritual truths to people so that they can begin to understand if they want to.

1. To Nicodemus (Jerusalem) (3:1-21)
  - a. Parable - Birth, wind, & Serpent on the pole
  - b. Must be born again to enter God's kingdom. This is a spiritual birth of a new spirit birthed by God's Spirit and this work is like the wind (can feel it and hear it, but don't know where it came from or where it is going). Jesus also reveals the cross & faith in him for life; if you do truth, you come to the light; if you do evil, you hate the light.
2. To Woman at the Well (Samaria) (4:5-42)
  - a. Parable - Well of Water & Harvest
  - b. Salvation is everlasting satisfaction; Sin must be dealt with; Salvation is exclusively 1 way (of the Jews); God is a Spirit & searching for worship in spirit and truth; Revealing he is the Messiah! Harvest is plenteous for the disciples. Get to work in other men's labours, receive wages, and gather souls to eternal life!
3. To the Jews at Feast (Jerusalem) (5:16-47)
  - a. Parable - Father and Son Working on the Sabbath
  - b. God is Jesus' Father and whatever the Father does the Son does; The Son does nothing of himself; The Father loves the Son; The Father has committed all things to the Son: resurrection power (quickening), and judgment: so that all should honour the Son! Must hear the voice of the Son to be raised. Multiple witnesses of Christ: John, Christ's works, the Father himself, and the

scriptures (of Moses). But the Jews cannot believe in Jesus because the word of the Father has no place in their hearts, and they are still seeking honour from men.

4. To the multitude that was fed (Capernaum) (6:22-71)
  - a. Parable - Eating bread
  - b. Christ is the true bread from heaven that satisfies ETERNALLY; No one can come to Jesus unless the Father draws; Christ is the one who came down from heaven and must be fully partaken of in his flesh and blood through coming to him and believing in him. He is the only true source of life; there is no life apart from him.
5. To the Jews at Tabernacles (Jerusalem) (7:14-39)
  - a. Parable - Teaching & Drinking (thirsting for truth)
  - b. Christ's doctrine is not his, but the Father's; must do God's will to know the doctrine! Exposes the hypocrisy in judgment concerning the sabbath; Christ knows the Father; Must come to Christ to have rivers of living water (the Spirit of truth that gives life).
6. To the Jews in the treasury after woman freed from adultery (Jerusalem) (8:12-59)
  - a. Parable - Light & Judgment
  - b. Jesus is the light of the world; he and his Father bear witness of him; he is from above and they are from beneath; they must believe that he is he; Christ teaches continuance in HIS word for true discipleship and freedom from sin; only the Son can make you free; He confronts the Pharisees with the reality that they do NOT have the love of God in them and are of their father the devil and will do HIS lusts (murder and lie); they CANNOT hear his word and will NOT believe the truth; Christ did not seek his own glory but revealed the truth that before Abraham was, "I am".
7. To the Jews after healing the blind man & then at Dedication (Jerusalem) (9:39 - 10:38)
  - a. Parable - Shepherd & Sheep
  - b. Jesus is the door to the sheepfold; any one beside him is a thief and robber; the thief comes to steal, kill, and destroy; Christ is the good shepherd who comes to give life; he knows his sheep, and his sheep follow him; he laid down his life for the sheep and had power to take it again; No man can pluck you from Christ and the Father's hands; He is one with the Father; Jews want to kill him, but he still gives them a chance to believe him because of his works.
8. To the Multitudes a few days before Passover/Cross (Jerusalem) - (12:20-50)
  - a. Parable - Wheat being sown and bringing forth fruit; and Light and Darkness
  - b. Christ's hour to die and glorify the Father is come; Love your life and lose it, or else hate it and keep it unto eternal life; to serve Christ we must follow him, and we will be honored; Walk in the light, believe in the light, so that you can become a child of the light; Christ came into the world to be a light; if you

reject him, his words will judge you in the last day and you will be left in darkness.

D. **8 Truths Spoken to the Disciples in the Upper Room:** Jesus' time with the disciples in the upper room is ONLY opened up in the book of John! Here we see Jesus' revealing important things to the disciples that we get to learn from. Here are 8 profound things Christ revealed:

1. Christ, the Lord & Master, served his own by washing their feet and ultimately, dying for them; we must do the same for the brethren. We are to love one another as Jesus Christ loved us. This will mark the true disciples of Jesus Christ: the love we have one for another. (13:1-35; 15:12-13)
2. Jesus Christ is the only way into fellowship with the Father. The Father is in Christ, and Christ is in the Father. To know Christ is to know the Father. (14:1-11)
3. If we believe on Christ, we shall do greater works than Jesus, because he goes back to the Father. Whatever we ask in his name, he will do it! (14:12-14)
4. If you love Jesus, keep his commandments. If you do, the Father and Christ will love you and then they will manifest themselves to you and come and abide with you. (14:15,21-23; 15:9-10)
5. Jesus will give us the Holy Ghost. He is the Comforter. He will abide with us for ever. He is the Spirit of truth; he will guide us into all truth and glorify Jesus Christ. He will reprove the world of sin, righteousness, and judgment. (14:16-20, 26; 15:26; 16:7-16)
6. We must abide in Christ (the vine) to bear good fruit. The Father is our husbandman. Through Christ we are both cleansed and bring forth more fruit to glorify the Father! (15:1-9)
7. His disciples are not just his servants, but are his friends! He reveals everything to his friends. He lays down his life for his friends. The world will hate us and persecute us just as it did to Jesus, but we can be of good cheer, Christ has overcome the world! (15:13-25; 16:1-4)
8. We will experience sorrow and mourning, but ultimately, our Lord promises us peace and joy that no man can take from us. We will see him again! Until that day, we can ask anything of the Father in Jesus' name, and it will be done for us. (14:27-31; 15:11, 20-31)

E. **8 Powerful things in Christ's prayer to his Father (John 17):** Only John records this amazing prayer of Jesus to his Father before they leave the upper room to head to the Mount of Olives where Jesus will be arrested. Here we really get to see the heart of both the Son and the Father like no where else. We must learn these things and lay them to our heart so that we might be one with the Father and the Son.

1. Christ has power over all flesh. (17:2)
2. Eternal life is to know the Father and Jesus Christ. (17:3)
3. Jesus manifested the name of the Father to those given to him so that the love the Father had for the Son will be in us! (17:6,26)
4. Jesus gave them the words of the Father and they believed. (17:8,14)

5. He prays for his own, that the Father would keep them from evil; he does not pray for the world. (17:9)
6. He has sent them into the world even as the Father sent him. (17:18)
7. He prays that we all will be one in him and the Father, even as the Father and the Son are one in each other! He prays this so that the world might believe in him. (17:11, 20-23)
8. He prays that we will be with Christ in glory to be with him and behold his glory! (17:24)

## **Acts of the Apostles**

**Written around A.D. 65**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: This book shows the history of the early church during the time of the apostles after Jesus went back to heaven. It shows the beginning, the blessings, the growth, the trials, and the sacrifices of the church led by the Holy Ghost. Acts 1:8 gives the outline of the movement of the gospel throughout the book. Acts primarily focuses on Peter's ministry through the 1st half of the book as the gospel goes to the Jews only, and then it focuses on Paul's ministry through the 2nd half as the gospel goes to both Jew and Gentile. This is a great book that shows the real Holy Ghost working through the real apostles of Christ to preach the pure gospel and build the true church of Christ.
- B. Authorship: Written by Luke the evangelist. See the "Authorship" section of Luke for additional information about Luke. Some other things to consider regarding Luke and Acts:
  1. Luke obviously spent time with the members of the early church later on and got detailed and accurate eyewitness accounts from them regarding much of the information in this book. In addition to this, Luke actually joined Paul's team in Troas as found in Acts 16:8-10. This is clear as the pronouns change from "they" to "we" and "us". It appears though that Luke was not arrested in Philippi with Paul and Silas and that he was left in Philippi and was absent from Paul's team from 16:19 until 20:6. It appears that when Paul came back through Philippi that Luke joined his team and seemed to pretty much be with Paul through the rest of the book (except for the fact that he obviously was not in the prisons and high courts with Paul when Paul was under arrest and called before governors and kings to give testimony to his dealings and faith in Christ). Therefore, Luke also got to be a firsthand eyewitness to quite a bit of the experiences of this great book of Acts.

C. Audience: This book was written to a man named Theophilus. See the “Audience” section of Luke for additional information regarding Theophilus.

1. This book was written as a part 2 to the gospel of Luke and was written to Theophilus. This was written to confirm the historical certainty of the work of God in his church by his Spirit during the time frame of about A.D. 33 to about A.D. 63 as the gospel and the faith of Christ spread throughout Israel, the Middle East, Asia Minor, and parts of Europe. Theophilus was obviously extremely interested in this faith and wanted to know how it had had such an impact on people and the Roman Empire during that time.
2. This book was also clearly inspired by the Holy Ghost and recorded in the scriptures for ANY person over the past 2,000 years who wants to see how “Christianity” began and began to spread throughout the world in just a few decades.
3. This book was also clearly inspired by the Holy Ghost and recorded in the scriptures for believers in Christ and the churches of Christ for the past 2,000 years to be able to look back and see the true roots of the gospel, the apostles, and the work of the Holy Ghost in the early churches. This is a vital book for believers and churches.

D. Analysis:

1. **A further testimony of the Lord Jesus Christ and his great gospel.** While Acts is not considered a gospel account, one of it’s main focuses throughout the book is the glorious gospel of Jesus Christ! Throughout the book he is proclaimed to be the Lord, the Christ, the Son of God, the Saviour, the Holy One, the Just, the Prince of life, and the Judge of quick and dead. He is openly proclaimed to be the ONLY way of salvation. He is proclaimed openly as the ONLY hope for man to have complete forgiveness of sins, justification before God, inheritance in the kingdom of God, and eternal life. The proof that he is all these things is his RESURRECTION which is openly preached and proclaimed throughout Acts and is the MAIN focal point of the gospel in Acts. Jesus is not presented as a personal Saviour with a private type of faith for a future in heaven. He is openly proclaimed as the risen Lord and Christ who will judge the world in righteousness, and those who publicly repent and believe in HIM with all their hearts are saved and receive the promise of the Holy Ghost. The gospel of Jesus Christ truly is the main focus in Acts as we see the Apostles and early church carrying it throughout Israel, parts of the Middle East, Asia Minor, and even as far as Rome!
2. **The work of the Holy Ghost both in the early church and reaching the lost.** The book of Acts begins with Jesus telling his apostles to “wait for the promise of the Father,” which ultimately would be the baptism of the Holy Ghost. In chapter 2, we see the early church being baptized in the Holy Ghost, and from that point forward the earth has never been the same. We see the move and work of the Holy Ghost throughout Acts in many different ways, including signs, wonders, healings, and miracles from the beginning of the book until the end. However, if one examines Acts closely, you will see that these works of the Holy Ghost were not actually the PRIMARY and main works and purpose of the ministry of the Holy



Ghost. Upon a careful examination of the work of the Holy Ghost in Acts you will see that the following 3 areas were the primary works of the Holy Ghost: first, to empower the early church to PUBLICLY proclaim (preach) the gospel of Jesus Christ with boldness and authority to ALL people (rich & poor, great & small, etc); second, to guide the believers into truth (true doctrine), unity, fellowship with God and each other, true love for one another, and Spirit-led holy lives; third, to strengthen the believers to endure and/or overcome severe adversity & persecution so that the gospel of Jesus Christ would continue to spread and multiply. These truly are the 3 major works of the Holy Ghost in the early church. And this great work of the Holy Ghost was ACCOMPANIED by great signs and wonders to CONFIRM that this was truly the work of God!

3. **The work of some key men of God in the early church.** This book is called the Acts of the "Apostles". It primarily focuses on the ministry of 2 apostles: Peter through the first half of the book, and then Saul/Paul in the second half of the book. These 2 truly were the chief apostles leading the charge in the early New Testament. Peter's primary ministry was to the Jews, but he also got to be the first one to bring the gospel to the Gentiles in chapter 10. Paul's primary ministry on the other hand ended up being to the Gentiles, however, every where he went he always preached to the Jews first. This book also includes some work of some of the following other key men in the early church: John the apostle, Stephen the deacon, Philip the evangelist, Barnabas (who became an apostle and was Paul's first ministry partner), Silas (Paul's second ministry partner), and James (the Lord's brother who also became an apostle). Other important men who make small appearances are James (John's brother), Ananias, John Mark, Timothy, Agabus, and Luke (who wrote Acts).
4. **The shift of the work of God from Israel to the Gentiles.** Jesus Christ came "to his own (Israel), and his own received him not." But he also prophesied in Luke's gospel that he would send apostles and prophets to Israel and that they would also reject them. The book of Acts shows God still faithfully bringing the truth of the gospel and the new covenant in Christ to Israel first (chapters 2-7). Israel was God's nation and he has always been faithful to them despite their unfaithfulness to him. However, once the leaders of the nation fully rejected the gospel by killing Stephen (chapter 7), God began to turn to the Samaritans (chapter 8) and the Gentiles (chapter 10). And through the rest of the book we see Israel (especially the leaders) for the most part being the enemies of the gospel and the gospel being more received by the Gentiles. In each new area, the gospel continued to go to the Jew first, and then the Gentile. This pattern follows all through the book as we see the Old Covenant decaying and waxing old and the New Covenant opening up more and more by the Spirit of God in the church of Jesus Christ (made up of both Jew and Gentile in one body).
5. **A foundational book of truth for the church of Jesus Christ.** Now-a- days there are so many different denominations that believe so many different things and have so many different doctrines and so many different forms of church governments with so many different ways of worship and so many different ideas about who

Jesus is and how Christians should live/act and so many different beliefs about the Holy Spirit and his work that it can be QUITE overwhelming and VERY CONFUSING. After reading through the four gospel accounts to get a good understanding of WHO the real Jesus Christ is, the book of Acts is such an IMPORTANT foundational book to the New Testament Church. In Acts you can see who the REAL Holy Ghost is (and his true works), who the REAL apostles of Jesus Christ are and what they preached and how they lived, the REAL gospel of Christ and what it's message is and how people respond to it, and the REAL church of Jesus Christ and how they operated and what was important to them. People are confused on many issues now-a-days like the baptism of the Holy Spirit, the gift of tongues, water baptism, the gospel of Jesus Christ, how to be saved, what makes a real church, how the church should operate, what should be the primary focuses of the church, who is welcome in the church, what it means to be led of the Spirit, what a man of God should be like, and so on. All of these issues can be CLEARLY ANSWERED and revealed if one honestly and patiently reads and studies through the book of Acts. ALL of these things are revealed so CLEARLY if one would just set their own views and opinions aside and just come to Acts honestly asking God to open up the truth according to HIS word (not man's traditions).

## II. Overview Outline

- |    |  |          |
|----|--|----------|
| A. | Preparation  | Ch 1     |
|    | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Introduction, Jesus spends 40 days with the 11, his ascension, the 120 continuing in prayer in the Upper Room, and the choosing of Mathias.</li> </ul>  |          |
| B. | The Day of Pentecost   | Ch 2     |
|    | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Baptism of the Holy Ghost, reaction of the crowd, Peter's message to the men of Israel, 3,000 saved, church gathers in the temple and homes.</li> </ul>   |          |
| C. | The Ministry in Jerusalem  | Ch 3-7   |
|    | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Gospel preached with signs and miracles, opposition and persecution begin, issues within the church dealt with, Stephen the first martyr.</li> </ul>  |          |
| D. | The Gospel to Judaea, Samaria, & Syria   | Ch 8-12  |
|    | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Philip in Samaria, Saul's conversion &amp; early ministry in Damascus, Peter's continued ministry, Gospel goes to the Gentiles (Cornelius &amp; house, and then Greeks in Antioch), Barnabus &amp; Saul in Antioch.</li> </ul>  |          |
| E. | The Gospel to the Ends of the Earth  | Ch 13-28 |
|    | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Paul's 1st trip as an apostle (w/Barnabus) <span style="float: right;">- 13-14</span> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Cyprus, Antioch of Pisidia, Iconium, Lystra, &amp; Derbe</li> </ul> </li> <li>2. Issue of Salvation &amp; Law dealt with in Jerusalem <span style="float: right;">- 15</span></li> <li>3. Paul's 2nd trip as an apostle (w/Silas) <span style="float: right;">- 16-18:22</span> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Derbe, Lystra, Phrygia, Galatia, Philippi, Thyatira, Thessalonica, Berea, Athens, Corinth, back to Antioch</li> </ul> </li> <li>4. Paul's 3rd trip as an apostle <span style="float: right;">- 18:23 - 21:17</span></li> </ol> |          |

- Galatia, Phrygia, Ephesus, Macedonia, Greece, Troas, Miletus, Tyre, Caesarea, and arrives at Jerusalem
- 5. Paul's arrest at Jerusalem and journey to Rome - 21:18 - 28:31
  - Paul's arrest, his defence to the Jewish men, the Jewish council, sent to Felix, trial before Felix, appearance before Festus, appeal to Caesar, defense to Festus & Agrippa, journey to Rome & shipwreck, Paul's ministry in Rome in house arrest to Jews & Gentiles.

### III. Keys

- A. Key Characters:
  - Jesus, the apostles, Peter, John, the priests, Joses Barnabas, Stephen, Philip, Saul (Paul), Ananias, Cornelius, Agabus, Herod, James, Silas, Timotheus (Timothy), Aquila, Priscilla, Apollos, Felix, Festus, Agrippa.
- B. Key Words/Phrases:
  - God, Jesus, Lord, Holy Ghost, Jews, apostles, Peter, Saul, preach(ed), speak, spake, saw, heard, word, believe(d), together, multitude, Jerusalem.
- C. Key Verses:
  1. 1:3; risen Christ with his apostles.
  2. 1:8; Promise of the Holy Ghost and his work.
  3. 2:41-47; the early church.
  4. 4:12; no other name.
  5. 4:18-20; Peter & John's response to the council.
  6. 7:51-54; Stephen rips into the Jews.
  7. 8:35-38; the requirement of faith for baptism.
  8. 9:15-16; the choosing and calling of Saul.
  9. 11:18; the open door to the Gentiles.
  10. 13:38-39; the power of the justification of faith.
  11. 14:22; importance of confirmation, continuance, and suffering.
  12. 15:7-11; Peter's answer in Jerusalem.
  13. 17:30-31; Command to all and future judgment.
  14. 20:19-21; Paul's ministry.
  15. 26:16-20; The calling and work of Paul.
  16. 28:30-31; Christ's prophecy and commission being fulfilled in Rome.

### IV. Other Good Stuff

- A. In Acts, we get to see true men of God preach the true gospel being filled with the Holy Ghost to call men to repentance and faith. It is SO IMPORTANT to read these messages carefully and prayerfully to see how the gospel is to be presented, what the main points are, and what is the aim of the message. I think you will see that it is often quite different than what is being preached today. It is also important to note who the gospel is being preached to and how the presentation of certain key points might vary

based on the audience. It is also interesting to note the response to the messages.

List of Public Preaching Messages:

1. Peter preaching to the men of Judaea on Pentecost: 2:14-40
2. Peter preaching to the men of Israel at the temple: 3:12-26
3. Peter preaching to the Jewish high council: 4:5-12
4. Peter preaching again to the Jewish high council: 5:27-33
5. Stephen preaching to the Jewish high council: 7:1-60
6. Peter preaching to Cornelius & his household: 10:33-44
7. Paul preaching in the synagogue in Antioch of Pisidia: 13:14-41
8. Paul preaching to the idolaters in Lystra: 14:13-18
9. Paul preaching to the Athenians at Mars Hill: 17:16-32
10. Paul preaching to the elders of the church of Ephesus: 20:17-38
11. Paul preaching to the men of Israel in Jerusalem: 21:39 - 22:22
12. Paul preaching to the Jewish high council: 22:30 - 23:10
13. Paul preaching to Felix the governor in Caesarea: 24:10-24
14. Paul preaching to Agrippa & Festus in Caesarea: 26:1-29

- B. In Acts we get to see many conversions to Jesus Christ, we see people being baptized with the Holy Ghost, and being filled with the Holy Ghost. These are awesome stories with different ways the Lord brought people to the same faith in Jesus Christ. It is also interesting to see some of the after-effects of these conversions and/or fillings. These are worth seeing and learning from. Here is a list of all of the fillings and/or conversions in the book of Acts:

1. The 120 disciples baptized with the Holy Ghost on Pentecost: 2:1-4
2. 3,000 Jewish men believing the gospel and being baptized: 2:41-47
3. The early church being filled with the Holy Ghost after prayer: 4:23-37
4. Multitudes of Jewish men and women believing: 5:12-16
5. Samaritans coming to faith, being baptized, and receiving the Holy Ghost: 8:5-25
6. The Ethiopian Eunuch believing and being baptized: 8:26-39
7. Saul of Tarsus coming to faith and being baptized: 9:1-22
8. Cornelius and his household receiving the Holy Ghost and being baptized: 10:44-48
9. The Grecians in Antioch coming to faith in Christ: 11:19-23
10. The conversion of the deputy of Paphos, Sergius Paulus: 13:6-12
11. The Gentiles coming to Christ in Antioch of Pisidia: 13:42-52
12. Jews & Gentiles coming to faith in Iconium: 14:1-5
13. Timothy comes to faith in Lystra: 16:1-3
14. Lydia comes to faith and is baptized in Philippi: 16:12-15
15. The Philippian jailor and his household come to faith and is baptized: 16:25-35
16. Jews & Greeks of Thessalonica believe: 17:1-4
17. Jews & Greeks of Berea believe: 17:10-12

18. A few men and women come to faith in Athens: 17:32-34
  19. Justus, Crispus & his house, and many others in Corinth come to faith and are baptized: 18:7-11
  20. Apollos being brought to the faith of Christ in Ephesus: 18:24-28
  21. Paul bringing 12 disciples of Ephesus to the faith of Christ and them receiving the Holy Ghost: 19:1-7
  22. People coming to faith in Asia through Paul's ministry in the school of Tyrannus: 19:8-12
  23. People coming to faith and repentance in Ephesus: 19:13-20
  24. Some Jews believing the gospel in Rome: 28:24-31
- C. There are many miracles throughout the book of Acts confirming the work and power of the Holy Ghost to accompany the truth of the gospel. Here is a list of all the miracles in the book of Acts:
1. Baptism of the Holy Ghost in the Upper Room. (2:1-4)
  2. The gift of tongues given to the 120 disciples to preach the gospel to the multitudes. (2:4-12)
  3. Apostles perform "many wonders and signs". (2:43)
  4. Peter heals the lame man by the power of Jesus' name. (3:1-10)
  5. Holy Ghost shakes the Place. (4:31)
  6. Peter's rebuke brings the death of Ananias and Sapphira. (5:1-11)
  7. Apostles perform "many signs and wonders". (5:12)
  8. Peter's shadow and presence healed multitudes of "sick, and them vexed with unclean spirits". (5:15-16)
  9. Angel frees Imprisoned apostles by night. (5:17-21)
  10. Stephen "did great wonders and miracles". (6:8)
  11. Philip does many miracles in Samaria. (8:6-8)
  12. Peter and John give the Holy Ghost by laying on hands. (8:14-17)
  13. Philip transported from the water to Azotus. (8:40)
  14. Jesus opens up heaven and speaks to Saul on the road to Damascus. (9:1-9)
  15. Ananias heals Saul by laying his hands on him. (9:8-19)
  16. Peter heals Aeneas of paralysis and palsy. (9:32-35)
  17. Peter raises Dorcas (Tabitha) from the dead. (9:36-41)
  18. Holy Ghost falls on Cornelius and his house. (10:44-45)
  19. The gift of tongues given to Cornelius and his house. (10:45-46)
  20. Peter delivered out of prison by an angel. (12:3-11)
  21. Herod's violent death. (12:20-23)
  22. Paul blinds Elymas (Barjesus) the sorcerer. (13:6-11)
  23. Paul and Barnabas perform "many signs and wonders". (14:3)
  24. Paul heals man crippled since birth. (14:8-10)
  25. Paul casts a spirit of divination out of a damsel. (16:16-18)

26. Earthquake frees Paul & Silas from prison. (16:25-27)
27. Paul gives Holy Ghost through laying on hands. (19:6)
28. The gift of tongues given to the 12 disciples in Ephesus. (19:6)
29. Paul works "special miracles" such as even handkerchiefs and aprons that had touched him were brought to sick and diseased and healed them. (19:11-12)
30. Paul raises Eutychus from death. (20:7-12)
31. Paul unaffected by a venomous viper's bite. (28:3-5)
32. Paul heals Publius' father of fever and bloody flux. (28:8)
33. Paul heals others on the island of various diseases. (28:9)

## **The Epistles of Paul the Apostle**

The next fourteen books of the New Testament are all epistles (letters) written by Paul the apostle. These letters were written to people groups, churches, regions, and specific believers. Paul was chosen by God to help open up the gospel of Jesus Christ and the Old Testament prophecies and types to teach the early churches (and believers throughout the past 2,000 years) in the doctrines, truth, purposes, and ways of the faith of Jesus Christ. You can also see the heart of this man, both towards the Lord and towards the saints, come through very strongly in his letters. He writes with passion, precision, purpose, urgency, and patience.

Paul was originally one of the strongest persecutors of the early church. He believed Jesus was a false prophet and that the apostles were deceiving the people of Israel away from the worship of the true God. But after he met Jesus Christ and was converted to faith in Jesus as the Messiah, he gladly gave up everything in his life to follow Jesus Christ and be true to him and his call. This is the heart and spirit of the man that comes across in these letters.

Paul's letters are commonly broken up into 3 categories:

- I. 9 Church Epistles: Romans, 1 Corinthians, 2 Corinthians, Galatians, Ephesians, Philippians, Colossians, 1 Thessalonians, & 2 Thessalonians.
  - \* These letters were written to specific churches, groups of churches, or all believers in specific geographic locations. These letters mostly focus on important foundational doctrines and specific issues that needed to be dealt with at that time.
- II. 4 Pastoral Epistles: 1 Timothy, 2 Timothy, Titus, & Philemon
  - \* These letters were written to specific individuals that had wholly given themselves to Christ and the ministry and were overseeing churches. These letters mostly deal with establishing order in the churches and charges to be true to the gospel.
- III. 1 General Epistle: Hebrews
  - \* Paul loved his people, the Hebrew people, perhaps above all people on the earth. The Lord inspired him to write a powerful letter confirming the truths of who the Lord Jesus is and of the new and better covenant that he established.

Paul was a teacher chosen by God to be the main apostle to the Gentiles. And so throughout his letters, Paul opens up, explains, and expounds many of the truths that Jesus himself taught and truths that were hidden in the Old Testament. His job was to teach the new believers (many of them Gentiles who were raised without the Old Testament) the ways and works of the Lord.

His letters also point continually back to Jesus Christ, his work, and his example, and forward to his return and judgment seat. These letters are so important for all New Testament believers to spend much time reading, studying, and learning from in order to grow properly in the faith and understanding of Jesus Christ and to be fit to serve him faithfully until we meet him.

“Nevertheless, brethren, I have written the more boldly unto you in some sort, as putting you in mind, because of the grace that is given to me of God, that I should be the minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministering the gospel of God, that the offering up of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the Holy Ghost.” - Paul the apostle (Romans 15:15-16)

## **Romans**

**Written around A.D. 65**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: The book of Romans is the most doctrinally complete epistle in the New Testament. It is the most comprehensive letter concerning the gospel of Christ, the righteous judgment of God, the differences between Jews and Gentiles, faith in Christ, justification, grace, the righteousness of God, obedience to Christ, the law of God, the Spirit of Christ, God's work with Israel, and righteous Christian living.
- B. Authorship: Written by Paul the apostle. Some things to consider regarding Paul and this letter:
  - 1. Paul was one of the top young Pharisees. He was a theological master of the Old Testament before he came to faith in Jesus Christ. His thorough working knowledge of the law combined with the understanding that Christ revealed to him is what gives him both a comprehensive view of God's work of salvation and a precision of detail in the key points of the gospel. Romans is definitely a product of the mind that God gave Paul and needs to be read thoroughly and repetitively in order to gain a sound understanding of it's contents.
  - 2. Jesus Christ directly chose Paul to be the chief apostle to the Gentiles. He was the primary one to bring this great news of the true God, his Son, and his salvation and eternal inheritance to those who had no knowledge or hope of such things. With Rome being the ruling empire of the day, Paul wrote his most comprehensive work to the believers in Rome as they would have major influence throughout the world at that time.

3. Paul was both a Roman citizen and a Jew. His understanding of the covenant relationship between God and Israel and of the Roman mindset and way of life both create an important backdrop to understanding the flow and themes of this letter.
- C. Audience: The believers in Rome (both Jews & Gentiles)
1. Rome was the world power of that day. They were Gentiles, (although many Jews did live in Rome); they were advanced and learned; they were not barbarians (uncivilized). They had a superior government, and they valued strength and might. They understood what it meant to be in the world but not the same as other cultures in the world.
  2. This letter was written to believers in Rome. It appears that many of these believers were Jews who came to believe in Jesus as their Messiah (most likely through the preaching of Peter on Pentecost in Acts 2). But clearly Paul is addressing Roman Gentile believers as well as he gives a bigger picture of the gospel beyond it's relationship to the law only.
- D. Analysis:
1. **A full presentation of the gospel of God and the gospel of Christ.** Paul introduces himself in verse one as a man who is separated unto the gospel of God and in verse 16 as a man who is not ashamed of the gospel of Christ. In chapter 15 and verse 16 he says that he is "the minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministering the gospel of God (so that the offering up of the Gentiles might be acceptable)". Paul's aim in Romans is to present a full overview picture of God's work with man from the creation until the judgment seat of Christ (where all believers will stand and give account to Jesus himself). He does this by revealing both the gospel of God and the gospel of Christ. The gospel of God is a bigger picture view of God, his creation, his justice in judgment, his dealings with man, his mercy, and his work in bringing men to repentance, faith, and obedience to him. The gospel of Christ is how Jesus Christ and his life, death, blood, and resurrection can actually bring forgiveness of sins and a new life of righteousness in him. This book is not a "How to Evangelize" manual (although we can certainly learn much key information that will aid us in evangelism), but this is written rather as a thorough analysis and explanation as to how God can take sinners (both Jews and Gentiles) who in and of themselves have no righteousness, and cleanse them of all their sin; declare them righteous (justify them); make them part of a new seed/race; and change them into servants of righteousness and sons of God that will actually be pleasing and acceptable to himself. Paul also shows how God can offer this to the whole world and yet still fulfill all his promises to Israel despite their blindness and rejection of the gospel. All of this is made possible by the gospel of God, the gospel of Christ, and the work of the Holy Ghost!
  2. **An instruction of the work and ways of Christ unto obedience to the faith.** When Jesus Christ rose from the dead, he commanded his apostles to "Go ye therefore, and teach ALL NATIONS... teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you." This book of Romans is Paul doing just that. He is bringing people unto obedience to the faith of Christ. He does this by



TEACHING! Paul gives no commands to the believer until 6:11. With the exception of some commands in chapter 6, pretty much all of chapters 1-11 are Paul teaching truth to the believer with no commands. There is POWER in the teaching of God. There is POWER in the doctrine of Christ. The Gentiles need to learn what to believe and how to think properly according to God's revelation (not their natural thinking). And then the ultimate purpose of this instruction is to bring ALL NATIONS to obedience to Jesus Christ's faith and gospel. Paul's instruction is as follows: he first proves our hopelessness apart from Christ and then reveals Christ's great work and his faith. Then after this, he begins to show and reveal what is our reasonable service based on the work of Jesus Christ. He shows how through Christ's sacrifice, faith in Christ, the resurrection of Christ, and the Spirit of Christ, we can ACTUALLY live holy and acceptable lives before God. He literally calls us to present our bodies as holy offerings and to grow in the will of God so that we might fulfill his good, acceptable, and perfect will for us on this earth. He shows us how to operate our different gifts for the good of the body. He shows us how to be in submission to the governmental powers that be. He shows us how to love one another in truth, and how to consider one another and not cause each other to stumble or judge one another over issues of preference. And all of this ultimately leads to genuine praise and glory to God! This truly is a book that is calling us to be obedient to the faith of Jesus Christ. The faith of Jesus Christ is not just saying we believe in Jesus; but it's truly believing in HIM, his work, his life, his gospel, his hope, his Spirit, and then because of this faith, walking in obedience to his commands.

3. **A revelation of the righteousness of God.** The book of Romans truly sets forth the righteousness of God from the beginning to the end. It reveals how God is righteous in ALL his dealings with man and that God will be righteous when he judges the world (Jews & Gentiles). He is righteous in his creation. He is righteous in his dealings with prideful sinful man. He is righteous in dealing with the Jews according to the law. He is righteous when dealing with the Gentiles without the law. He is righteous in condemning all of mankind to death. He is righteous in justifying sinners by faith in Christ. He is righteous to justify sinners because of who Jesus is, and his death, burial, and resurrection. He is righteous in setting Israel aside so that the gospel can go to the Gentiles. He will be righteous when he restores and reconciles Israel. He is righteous! And his righteousness is revealed in the gospel of Jesus Christ. And this righteousness can be revealed to us by faith! Hallelujah!
4. **A book that proves the superiority of faith and grace to the works of the law.** Throughout the book of Romans, Paul continues to show how the law was good and of God but how the law was insufficient to accomplish the work of justification and sanctification in man. He shows how faith was the key before the law ever existed and how faith is the key after the time of the law. This gift of faith brings righteousness, and this is all by the grace of God! All of this redounds to God's glory, not man's.

## II. Overview Outline

- A. Introduction Ch 1:1-17
  - Introduction, themes of the book, salutation, Paul's desire to preach at Rome, and the power of the gospel.
- B. Condemnation of all Ch 1:18 - 3:20
  - God's dealings with departed mankind and self-righteous men (Jews & Gentiles), true circumcision, and universal condemnation by the law.
- C. Justification by faith offered to all Ch 3:21 - 4:25
  - Universal salvation offered to all who believe; received by faith without works and with or without circumcision because of Jesus.
- D. Victory over sin offered to all in Christ Ch 5 - 8
  - New headship/race, power of death and resurrection in Christ, death to the law, victory in the Spirit, and guaranteed future glorification!
- E. Past, Present, & Future of Israel Ch 9 - 11
  - Paul's heart for Israel; their gifts, calling, stumbling, confusion, blindness, and hope of their future restoration.
- F. True Christian Conduct Ch 12 - 15
  - Gifts for the church, treatment of others, relationship to authority, how to treat weak brothers in Christ, and ministry to the lost.
- G. Conclusion Ch 16
  - Commendations, greetings, warnings, farewells, & summary of the book.

## III. Keys

- A. Key Themes:
  - The gospel, the righteousness of God, the judgment of God, sin and death, faith, justification, grace, eternal life, the law, Jews & Gentiles, Jesus Christ, salvation, service, brotherly love.
- B. Key Words/Phrases:
  - God, Christ, Gentiles, law, righteousness, sin, death, grace, faith, believe(d)(th), justif(y)(ied)(ication), judge(st)(ment), glory, gospel, "what shall we say then?", "God forbid".
- C. Key Verses:
  - 1. 1:16-17; power of the gospel.
  - 2. 3:19-28; the law, condemnation, faith, & justification.
  - 3. 8:9,14-17; the Spirit of Christ (adoption).
  - 4. 10:8-17; the word of faith and salvation.
  - 5. 12:1-3; consecration.
  - 6. 16:25-27; summary of the letter.

#### IV. Other Good Stuff: Fascinating Studies

1. The gospel of God and the gospel of Jesus Christ.
2. The ways all men know there is a God.
3. The downward steps away from God towards the reprobate mind.
4. The characteristics of the reprobate mind.
5. The workings of the conscience.
6. How God granted eternal life and judged mankind (for both Jews & Gentiles) before Christ.
7. Circumcision & Uncircumcision.
8. The state of mankind without God.
9. The purposes and functions of the law both to the lost and the believer.
10. Justification of faith (consider the meanings of key words such as “justified”, “righteousness”, “redemption”, “propitiation”, “remission”, “atonement”).
11. Abraham as the father of faith in relation to us as believers.
12. The contrasts between Adam and Jesus Christ.
13. Baptism & resurrection.
14. The contrasts of serving sin and serving righteousness.
15. The marriage and divorce to God under the Old Covenant (with the deliverance from the law that brought forth fruit unto death) and the remarriage to Christ through the New Covenant (which brings forth good fruit unto God). (Important other scriptures to consider regarding this: Exodus 19; Numbers 30; Jeremiah 31; Zechariah 11, Ephesians 5, etc.)
16. The work and confirmation of the Spirit.
17. God’s foreknowledge, predestination, calling, justification, & glorification.
18. The work of God with Israel and their restoration/reconciliation.
19. The contrasts of the law and grace.
20. A believer’s reasonable service.
21. A believer’s relationship with the governmental powers.
22. Believers relationships with each other.

# **1 Corinthians**

**Written around A.D. 56**

## **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: The book of 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians is the most practically complete epistle in all of the New Testament regarding church unity, focus, discipline, conduct, operations and boundaries. The Corinthian church was a young, carnal church filled with strife, divisions, impurity, selfishness, disorder, pride, and misuse of spiritual gifts. Paul rebukes and instructs accordingly with sound doctrine.
- B. Authorship: Written by Paul the apostle. Some things to consider regarding Paul and this letter:
  - 1. Paul was separated by the Holy Ghost to be an apostle to the people of Asia Minor and Europe. Paul was sent to go into new regions that never heard the gospel and both preach the gospel of Jesus Christ and help establish the new believers in the faith of Christ. He would then leave some able men to oversee the new church and then he'd remain in contact with the young churches to help oversee and deal with any issues that needed his input.
  - 2. Paul was the one who established the church in Corinth (you can read about it in Acts 18:1-17) along with Aquila, Priscilla, Silas, and Timothy. Paul always went to the synagogues and brought the gospel to the Jews first in any region he went to. Some of the men of the synagogue believed the gospel (including Justus and Crispus) but most rejected Jesus. So then Paul turned to the Gentiles and the gospel brought many to faith. They met in Justus' house and Paul spent a year and a half there establishing the believers in the faith. Some time after they left the church behind in Corinth, Aquila and Priscilla met Apollos in Ephesus and led him to Jesus Christ. Then Apollos went to Corinth and spent some time there teaching the church the word of God.
  - 3. Paul was a true apostle with a spiritual father's heart towards the people he led to Jesus Christ and the churches he established. A spiritual father does not give sermons or Bible lessons to those whom he loves. A spiritual father guides the children of God into a true life of godliness, humility, and faith. Thus, a spiritual father works with the children of God through good times and bad times. He is willing to deal with unpleasant situations and able to bring proper discipline and correction to those whom he loves. Paul was such a man and we see this heart and work manifested in the letter of 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians.
- C. Audience: The church of God in Corinth
  - 1. Corinth was the largest city of Greece during that time. It was a sea port city and a trading hub for the ancient world. It was home to Greeks, Romans, Orientals, and many other merchants. It was a city of material wealth, affluence, intellectual aptitude, and gross idolatry and immorality. These factors really set the backdrop for the issues and challenges that the church in Corinth faced. Paul is not writing to the unbelievers in Corinth, but to the church. However, since this church dwelt in the midst of this kind of culture and was not growing properly in the ways of the

Lord, the ways of the Corinthian culture were definitely influencing and harming the spirit of the church.

2. The church had written a letter to Paul regarding questions about issues such as marriage, divorce, meat sacrificed to idols, women's roles and head coverings, and spiritual gifts. Paul addresses all these issues and lays out good sound doctrine concerning them. However, Paul also had received news from the household of Chloe (a member of the church) that there were divisions in the church, sexual immorality not being dealt with, abuse and neglect of the poor brethren, chaotic meetings, and serious doctrinal error concerning the resurrection of the dead. Paul also takes each of these issues head on with great wisdom. He deals with the issues and lays out sound reasoning and understanding to explain how things should be handled according to the Spirit of God. So this was a church that was a mix of many different types of people. They mostly were carnal, confused, immature believers in Christ. However, there were no doubt some spiritual brethren amongst them along with some rebellious, disobedient false believers among them. The response of each individual in that church to this letter certainly revealed much about their true nature. Those who responded with repentance and a change of spirit certainly manifested themselves as believers in Jesus Christ. Those who rejected the counsel of Paul against themselves and continued in discord and contentions certainly proved themselves to be reprobate. So too, does every "Christian's" response to this letter today.

D. Analysis:

1. **A letter to straighten out a confused church.** Following the salutations and introduction to the letter, from the beginning of this letter until the end of it, Paul is straightening out a very selfish, carnal, confused church in just about every way possible. From refocusing them to Christ instead of their favorite ministers, to helping them see what a true man of God is like (suffers much loss and gives more and loses more than he gets and receives for the furtherance of the gospel and his spiritual children), to commanding them to put a fornicator out of the church, to fixing their views on marriage and divorce and virgins, to dealing with confusion regarding the exercising of spiritual gifts in the church and the role of women in the church, to straightening out fundamental doctrinal heresy and confusion regarding the resurrection, Paul takes it all head on. This church was messed up in focus, purity, practice, consideration of one another, leadership, gifts, and doctrine. Paul takes the role of a true spiritual father and deals with all these issues accordingly. What's amazing is that many of the problems and issues that are faced today in modern western churches are strikingly similar to identical to the issues faced in Corinth nearly 2,000 years ago. Praise the Lord that God inspired Paul to write this letter and then kept it preserved in the scriptures for us today as this letter is a GREAT help to any modern Christian or church that is looking to deal with these issues in the manner and with the heart that is pleasing to Jesus Christ. So many modern errors that are taught and practiced in the modern evangelical and charismatic movement would be fixed so quickly if people would just read through 1

Corinthians in honesty and humility. ALL THESE ISSUES of contention have been already dealt with. Thank you Lord.

2. **A confirmation of the Lordship of Jesus Christ as head over his body (the church).** In the first 10 verses, the term Jesus Christ, or Lord Jesus Christ, or some close variation thereof is found 9 times! This book from the get go is establishing the fact and the truth that Jesus Christ is the Lord and head of the church. Paul is helping the Corinthians to grow up past the human instruments that God uses and to focus on who it really is all about: Jesus Christ! They were carnal and therefore still focused on their favorite preachers and monetary blessings and advancement in worldly things and thought these things were a sign of blessing. Paul has to set them straight. He shows them that the greater the man of God, the more he becomes like Christ and is misunderstood and suffers loss. They thought their bodies were their own and they could do what they wanted with them. Paul has to set them straight and reveal that their bodies have been purchased by and belong to the Lord. Some thought they could eat at the Lord's table with believers and eat at the devil's table with unbelievers. Paul has to set them straight. They thought that their spiritual gifts were given for the purpose of a good experience and a wild spiritual church service. Paul has to set them straight. He reveals that the gifts are given by the Spirit for the edification of others in the church and that the person using the gifts is to still have complete control of themselves both when exercising their gifts in the appropriate time and manner AND when having to restrain from exercising their gifts for decency and order within the church. The church gathering is not to be a spiritual circus but to be a building up of each other into the likeness of our head, Jesus Christ. Lastly Paul reveals how Jesus Christ and his resurrection along with his appearances to others are the foundational points to our gospel. He shows that Christ truly is the head in that he is the firstfruits into the spiritual nature as the last Adam so that we might all partake of eternal life and glorified spiritual bodies. All of this is possible because of this great victory by our Lord Jesus Christ!
3. **A call to live as saints.** In the second verse Paul states that all who call on the name of our Lord Jesus are sanctified in Christ Jesus (that means set apart) and that we are "called to be saints." This letter is truly a call of a man of God to God's people to leave the old ways behind and truly walk as saints of the Lord. This is part of the real call of the true gospel. The gospel is not to just save us from hell to come but make no difference in our actual lives. No, the gospel call is to be "washed, sanctified, and justified in the name of our Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God." In this book, Paul, by pointing to the Lord Jesus and the work of his Spirit, is calling the saints of Corinth (and everywhere) to truly walk as saints that belong to Jesus.

## II. Overview Outline

- A. Introduction Ch 1:1-9
  - Introduction, salutation, greetings, setting the tone for the letter.
- B. Dealing with Divisions & Purpose Ch 1:10 - 4:23

- Refocusing to Christ and the cross, to the Spirit and his wisdom, to the co-laboring of the body, and to the work of true men of God.
- C. Dealing with Defilement & Purity Ch 5 - 7
  - Dealing with fornication, who to company with, how to deal with issues in the church, and answering questions about marriage, divorce, & virginity.
- D. Dealing with Diversity & Conscience Ch 8 - 10
  - Answering questions pertaining to meats offered to idols, preferences, brotherly love, considering one another, & conscience.
- E. Dealing with Headship & Church Assembly Ch 11 - 14
  - Dealing with headship, fellowship meals, spiritual gifts, diversity in the body, unity of heart, edification & order in the assemblies.
- F. Dealing with Doctrine & Collections (& Conclusion) Ch 15 - 16
  - Dealing with the resurrection, collection of funds, & concluding remarks.

### III. Keys

- A. Key Themes:
  - The gospel, the cross, the resurrection, Jesus Christ the Lord, proper judgment, God's wisdom, The Spirit of God, headship, spiritual gifts, considering one another in the assembly, decency and order.
- B. Key Words/Phrases:
  - God, Lord, Christ, Spirit, spirit, man/men, church, under, glory, speak, now, preach(ed)(ing), fool(s)(ish)(ishness), gospel, wisdom, knowledge, idol(s)(ater) (atry), fornication, wife, husband, brother/brethren.
- C. Key Verses:
  1. 1:8-10; calling and unity.
  2. 1:17-18; the power of the preaching of the cross.
  3. 1:27-29; the chosen of God.
  4. 2:4-5; the power of Spirit filled preaching.
  5. 3:11; the foundation of the church.
  6. 6:9-11; the inheritors of the kingdom of God.
  7. 6:15-20; our bodies are the temple.
  8. 9:19-23; laying down our life for others.
  9. 11:3; God's headship.
  10. 13:11-13; growing up into Christ
  11. 15:20-22; Christ is risen!
  12. 15:54-58; Victory over death guaranteed through Christ!

IV. Other Good Stuff: Solving Problems: This book is a book where Paul has to address many problems and questions within the church of Corinth. Paul, as a wise, spiritual father, seeks to answer and address these problems not just at the surface level, but to really address them at the root of the problems. This is a great book for many issues

in Christianity. So below here is a list of problems and questions that needed to be addressed in Corinth (and still need to be addressed today in many churches/believers). I have given a thorough answer to the first couple of problems, but I will leave the rest open for you to study and come to the solutions by reading through the book and seeing what the solution/answer that Paul gives as a wise master-builder.

1. Problem: Divisions, strifes and contentions in the congregation.
  - a. Proof of problem: People are following and exalting their favorite leaders/preachers, and people are going to court to sue one another.
  - b. Root Cause of Problem: Their spiritual immaturity, carnality, and lack of understanding of the gospel and the body of Christ.
  - c. Solution: Need to change their understanding of the body of Christ, Christ and his gospel, the role of ministers/men of God, and the purpose and functioning of the gathering of the saints (church).
    - i. Must realize the body is one and it is God's will and desire for us to be perfectly joined together in spirit, mind, and judgment.
    - ii. Must understand that we are to operate as a team all for the same Lord and same purpose.
    - iii. Must understand that God is the one who makes us different and gives us different roles in the church.
    - iv. Must understand that Jesus Christ is the Lord and head of the church (not any mortal man or woman). The goal is that ALL of us would be HIS disciples and true and faithful to HIM (not to a man or minister) until the end.
    - v. Must understand that the greater and more powerful a man of God truly is, the more he will serve and suffer loss for the gospel's sake.
    - vi. Must understand that the congregation does not belong to the ministers, but actually the ministers belong to the congregation (they are there to serve them), and that we ALL belong to Christ.
    - vii. Must change their perspective of the church gathering/service/assembly from being a super-spiritual experience where people want to show off their gifts and are trying to create a hyped atmosphere of "spirituality" into a more mature understanding that we are to come together to lay down our lives one for another. The exercising of our gifts in the body is for the edification of one another, not to create an awesome, hyped "spiritual" experience.
2. Problem: There is open fornication taking place with members of the church.
  - a. Proof of problem: The church is puffed up that these people are accepted in their "tolerant" assembly.
  - b. Root Problem: They don't understand the death of Christ, his gospel, true entrance into the kingdom of God, and who to keep company with and who NOT to keep company with.
  - c. Solution: They need to put the fornicators out of the church, mourn unto repentance, and deepen their understanding of Christ's cross.



- i. Christ did not die for us to continue in sin. Christ did not die to create a body of sin. Christ took our sins and was sacrificed for us as our pure passover lamb so that we could be a body of unleavened believers (without sin and error). We are to be a body of sincere and true believers. Once sin or error is openly accepted in the church then the church becomes leavened and the whole church will become corrupted.
  - ii. Any unrepentant sinners or heretics must be put out of the church. The church must not keep company with anyone who calls himself a brother but is living in open sin. He must be separated from so that there might be hope for BOTH him to come to repentance AND for the body to stay pure.
  - iii. No people that continue in open sin will enter or inherit the kingdom of God. There is no such salvation in Jesus. The salvation of Christ is ONLY for those who have come to repentance and is NOT for people who want to continue in fornication, adultery, homosexuality, idolatry, witchcraft, sorcery, murder, hatred, thievery, drunkenness, etc. Anyone of these people CAN be saved through coming to repentance and faith in Jesus Christ. But God's salvation does not KEEP us in the same condition. God's salvation washes us, sanctifies us, and justifies us (sets us apart for Christ and makes us a new creature that lives in righteousness).
  - iv. The church as a whole and the individual bodies of believers are the TEMPLE of the Holy Ghost. This is no light matter. The Holy Ghost does not dwell in us so that we can feel good. The Holy Ghost enters us so that we might be HOLY! God is HOLY and wants a HOLY temple of believers to dwell in and fellowship with. God does not want to be joined to sin or uncleanness. So we as the body of Christ are not to join ourselves to sin and uncleanness. We are to desire and remain holy and pure so that we might be a worthy temple for our great Lord and God.
- 3. Questions about marriage, divorce, and celibacy.
- 4. Questions about eating meats sacrificed to idols.
- 5. Questions about qualifications of an apostle.
- 6. Questions about headship and head coverings.
- 7. Proper behavior and consideration at fellowship meals.
- 8. Proper understanding, usage, and manifestations of spiritual gifts
- 9. Which gifts are profitable for church assemblies, proper order and oversight of the meetings.
- 10. True understanding of the resurrection of Christ and the saints.

## 2 Corinthians

Written around A.D. 57

### I. The Book:

- A. Synopsis: The book of 2<sup>nd</sup> Corinthians is Paul's follow up letter to the church of Corinth about a year after he wrote 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians. Most of the church received the rebuke and instruction of Paul and therefore grew considerably. Here Paul opens up some amazing truths for New Testament believers. However, there were still some people in the church that doubted Paul and his calling as an apostle, so Paul has to defend his apostleship.
- B. Authorship: Written by Paul the apostle. For some additional information regarding Paul see the "Authorship" section of 1 Corinthians. Some other things to consider regarding Paul and this letter.
  - 1. This was most likely Paul's third letter to the church of Corinth. (The first one he wrote is not in the scriptures.) This letter really shows Paul's humility, patience, love, and heart for the saints at Corinth. More than anything, he truly desired that they would sort out all their issues before he came to see them again. He wanted their time together to be a time of rejoicing, not a time of correction and rebuke. He was hopeful to have been able to come see them again by the time he wrote this letter but faced some challenges in Asia that hindered him. He is writing to both prepare them for and assure them of his coming.
- C. Audience: The church of God in Corinth. For some additional information regarding Corinth see the "Audience" section of 1 Corinthians.
  - 1. The church had major problems. However, after they received Paul's letter of 1 Corinthians, they took some action. The person committing fornication was put out of the church and everyone in the church separated from him. Evidently he had shown genuine signs of repentance but the church would have nothing to do with him. So here Paul actually admonishes them to forgive him and receive him back into the fellowship. There were also people in the church that were against Paul and convinced that he was not a true apostle. Paul had to deal with those people and also appeal to the majority of the church as to why he did indeed qualify as a genuine apostle of Jesus Christ.
- D. Analysis:
  - 1. **A letter of comfort.** Following 1st Corinthians, the church had responded to Paul's instruction. They had wept and mourned and repented for their errors and attitudes and selfishness. They had actually put the man out of the church that had been living in fornication and told everyone in the church to have nothing to do with him. They were really trying to do right by the Lord. However, there was a lot of godly fear and uncertainty and they were dealing with much sorrow. They were waiting for Paul and Timothy to come and visit but they had been delayed and so at this point, some were even wondering if Paul cared about them anymore. Some were wondering if Paul wasn't going to come anymore because of the conflicts and issues the church was having. Paul writes this letter to comfort the believers in Corinth. He writes them to show that God takes us through tribulations and allows

us to face hard things so that we can truly receive comfort and help only from him. Paul explains that at the same time the church in Corinth was having to deal with these difficult matters they themselves (Paul and Timothy) faced extreme tribulation and hardships in Asia to the point of where they thought they were going to die. He explains how God comforted them and delivered them. And he is writing this letter to do the same for the church. He also explains that now that the man living in fornication has repented and turned back to the Lord, that the church should forgive him and receive him back so that he might be comforted in his sorrow. Paul is trying to show that through sufferings and hardships God's grace and comfort can carry us and deliver us so that we can comfort others in their trials and afflictions.

2. **A letter to confirm the church in the truth of Paul's ministry.** While most of the church responded well to Paul's letter, over time, there were some still in the church that were doubting or outright denying Paul's honesty, integrity, and calling as an apostle. Paul has to write this letter to confirm the truth of who he is in Christ, his calling as an apostle, and specifically his relationship with the church in Corinth. Paul explains his mind towards the church (that he will come visit and was not wavering). Paul opens up his heart towards the church (that they are in his heart and that the Spirit of God is in their heart because of the work of Paul). Paul tells them of his praise of the church (how he boasts about their giving and generosity towards other churches around the world). Paul opens up the things that he has suffered both for the church of Corinth and for the gospel of Christ. Paul has to confirm to the weak-minded believers in Corinth who he is so that they might not be swayed away from the Lord through other voices who have crept into the church to just rise to the top for their own glory. And he confirms them in the truths of the new testament (covenant) in Christ and this great light shining in darkness and this great treasure that God has put in us. He confirms this newness of life in Jesus Christ and this great grace of God.
3. **A warning to stay true to the real Jesus Christ and his gospel.** Paul has to warn the church to stay pure and separate from any thing or person that will corrupt the purity of the gospel. He warns against the law, against idolatry, against men speaking evil of Paul, against "another Jesus", "another spirit", "another gospel", and false ministers of Satan. Paul really charges the church to take care of the things and people that need to be taken care of before he comes. He tells them that when he comes he wants it to be a time of rejoicing and joy, but that if they don't take care of those people that are bringing error into the church and speaking against Paul, when he comes he'll come with a rod and use his power in Christ for destruction against those evil things and ones. Paul is not playing church. And he warns them about the reality of the devil and their need to take these things to heart and take care of these matters.

## II. Overview Outline

- |    |   |                |
|----|---|----------------|
| A. | Salutation & Thanksgiving   | Ch 1:1-11      |
|    | • Salutation & thanksgiving to God for his deliverance & comfort. |                |
| B. | Paul Explains his Ministry of Reconciliation                      | Ch 1:12 - 7:16 |

1. He defends his integrity. - 1:12 - 2:17
2. He describes the new covenant & his apostolic ministry. - 3:1 - 6:10
3. He makes his appeal to the saints at Corinth. - 6:11 - 7:16
- C. The Collection for the Saints at Jerusalem Ch 8 - 9
  - The example of the churches of Macedonia, an exhortation and explanations regarding liberal giving.
- D. Paul Defends his Apostolic Calling Ch 10 - 13:10
  1. Explanation Concerning his Conduct. - 10:1-18
  2. Some “foolish” boasting. - 11:1 - 12:13
  3. Preparing them for his coming. - 12:14 - 13:10
- E. Conclusion & Benediction Ch 13:11-14

### III. Keys

- A. Key Themes:
  - comfort, tribulation/trials/troubles, sufferings, Paul coming to Corinth, sorrow, thanksgiving, the ministry, the gospel, the grace of God, holiness, repentance, giving, Paul’s sufferings.
- B. Key Words/Phrases:
  - God, Christ, Spirit, glory(ing), comfort(eth)(ed), boast(ing)(ed), grace, gospel, ministry/ministration/minister(s)(ing)
- C. Key Verses:
  1. 1:3-4; tribulation & comfort,
  2. 3:6-11; the excelling of the new to the old.
  3. 4:3-6; the light of the gospel.
  4. 5:17-21; the new life and ministry of reconciliation.
  5. 6:14-18; the call to separation from idolatry unto God.
  6. 8:9; the grace of our Lord Jesus.
  7. 9:6-11; sowing, reaping, multiplication, and thanksgiving.
  8. 10:3-6; true spiritual warfare.
  9. 11:1-4; call to be true to our one husband.
  10. 12:7-10; Paul’s infirmity and Christ’s sufficient grace.
  11. 13:5; the call to self-examination for true salvation.

IV. Other Good Stuff: Deep Truth: This book is a book where Paul is ultimately explaining his ministry and heart and preparing the church of Corinth for his return visit. However, in the process of doing this Paul opens up some really deep and profound truths that are worth studying thoroughly and meditating upon. Below are a list of some key passages and verses with the general truth being revealed that are really worth digging into:

1. Comfort, endurance, & deliverance in trials and sufferings. (1:3-11)
2. The certainty of the will and work of Christ in us. (1:15-22; 2:14-16)

3. The heart of a true minister of Christ and forgiveness. (1:23 - 2:11)
4. The superiority of the new testament (in contrast w/the old). (3:1-18)
5. The gospel of Christ and the blinded world in darkness. (4:1-7)
6. The practical outworking of the gospel and our faith and focus. (4:7-18)
7. The truth of our body, the resurrection, and being with Christ. (5:1-11)
8. Understanding the gospel and our ministry. (5:14 - 6:2)
9. Walking as true ministers of Christ. (6:3-11)
10. The call of real separation from unbelievers unto the true God. (6:14-18)
11. The working of true godly sorrow and proofs of repentance. (7:7-15)
12. True godly giving of grace for churches & saints in need. (8:1-24)
13. Important truths regarding sowing, reaping, multiplication, God's supply, and how giving works genuine thanksgiving unto God's glory. (9:6-15)
14. Spiritual Warfare and some keys to victory. (10:3-6)
15. True authority and heart of true men of God. (10:7-18)
16. The purity of the gospel and warnings of false ministers. (11:1-20)
17. Paul's insane sufferings with Christ's mighty grace. Also proofs/marks of true apostles and specifically, Paul's apostleship. (11:23 - 12:21)
18. Rich truth of Christ's cross compared to his resurrection and the implications concerning ministry. (13:1-10)

## **Galatians**

**Written around A.D. 58**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: Galatians is a letter that Paul wrote to a number of churches in Galatia to confront and correct them for having been seduced back under the OT law, and help turn them back to the true gospel of Jesus Christ and the walk of faith in the Spirit. He helps show them their error by contrasting their error with the truth. He contrasts the law & grace, works & faith, the OT & NT, the works of the flesh & the fruit of the Spirit, the bondage of religion & the liberty of Christ, and the glory of man & the glory of the cross of Christ.
- B. Authorship: Written by Paul the apostle. Some other things to consider regarding Paul and this letter.

1. It seems quite certain that Paul established these churches himself as he calls them “my little children” in 4:19. Due to the fact that Paul was so radically saved by the grace of Christ after being so zealous of the law and yet being so spiritually blind to the gospel, and due to the fact that Paul had established these churches, we can see why he is so severe and passionate in this letter concerning this serious issue that threatened the souls of these churches in Galatia. Paul was clearly the perfect man to write this letter and deal with this issue both with irrefutable personal testimony and scriptural reasoning to establish the truth of the gospel of grace being something completely separate from the OT law. We must remember that Paul was 100% devoted to the law and walked “blameless” according to the righteousness of the law (according to his own testimony in Philippians 3:6), and yet Paul did NOT know God, had no peace of God, did not have the Spirit of God, and thereby was “lost” and “blind”. It was only when Paul met Jesus Christ himself and came to faith in Christ and his gospel that Paul was granted spiritual vision, peace, and the Holy Ghost to truly know, love, and serve the Lord. Then, Paul (even though he was the last apostle chosen) seems to have been propelled ahead of the other apostles in his understanding of this liberty in the gospel of grace (in relation to the bondage of the OT law); and thus, he fought and stood for these truths when even others were still uncertain where the line was. It’s out of these experiences and understanding that Paul wrote this letter to these deceived churches.
- C. Audience: The churches of Galatia. Some information regarding the region of Galatia and these churches:
1. Galatia was a region in north-central Anatolia (modern-day Turkey) that was settled by the Celtic Gauls. This region was greatly influenced by Greek culture (“Hellenized”) and then became a Roman province under the Roman Empire. Many of the people there were under the worship of Roman gods. The region was definitely accustomed to the sins of the flesh and debauchery that accompanied Roman pagan worship. However, there was also a good amount of Stoicism and “honour based” living based on a fear of the god of war. Added to this, there were Jewish communities that brought the law of Moses and the piety of obedience to the law of God to this region. This provides some of the backdrop into which Paul entered to bring this glorious gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ that frees us from bondage to the flesh and the law and truly makes us free to live pure holy lives by the Spirit of God.
  2. These churches appear to have been established by Paul, Silas, and Timothy after preaching in Phrygia and before going to Mysia during Paul’s “Second Missionary Journey”, as found in Acts 16:4-6. It then appears that Paul revisited these churches to strengthen them in the faith during his “Third Missionary Journey” later in Acts 18:23 just after he departed from Antioch and before he went to Ephesus. These churches apparently began well in the gospel of Christ. However, it appears that shortly after they were established, Jewish men (known as “Judaizers”) came into these churches to teach that in order to fully follow the Lord these believers had to be circumcised according to the law of Moses. It appears that just about all of the churches of Galatia were “bewitched” by this error and fell under bondage. As a

result, the churches grew in a religious “holiness” and “honour” to these supposed “great men of God”; but actually, sin & error began to abound. Paul steps in to deal with this matter.

D. Analysis:

1. **A letter of re-establishing the truth.** Paul brings these churches back to THE SOURCE of: his authority as an apostle, the gospel, his revelation, the work of the Spirit, the miracles that they have experienced, and the liberty they once had. The SOURCE of all these things is Jesus Christ and God the Father themselves. In this letter he has to re-establish these truths that they once had known but were seduced away from without even realizing it. Paul clearly and effectively re-establishes the truths of the NT gospel and the source of them.
2. **A letter to confront and correct the errors they had fallen into.** Paul not only points them back to Jesus himself and the source of the NT gospel truth, but he also openly confronts the errors that they have fallen into and he shows them the severe consequences for both those who have preached this false gospel and for those who have departed from faith in Christ for this false gospel. Paul does not mix words in this letter. This is the only letter where Paul does not give thanks for the churches to whom he is writing. Paul does not really give any praise or compliments to the church but pretty much jumps right to this vital issue. This letter is motivated by Paul’s love for these believers gone astray. But this is not a letter of compassion and kindness to try to win them back gently. Rather, this is a letter of harsh correction and severe warning to try to save the true believers amongst them from these crippling errors they have fallen into and to admonish them to cut off the false converts and false teachers that have entered in among them to spoil their liberty. As stated in the Synopsis above, Paul really does this very effectively by contrasting the truth with the error side-by-side so that the believers can see the error for what it is. I liken this method to a situation where someone’s water has slowly been polluted and cannot even tell that it is impure anymore. Rather than just scold the person for drinking polluted water, Paul takes a proverbial glass of fresh clean water and sets it right next to the glass of polluted water and then reprimands them for having been so foolish to have forsaken the pure gospel for this polluted one. This is Paul’s method in this letter for exposing the error and correcting it with the truth.
3. **An exhortation to get back on track and continue in the faith, grace, and Spirit of Jesus Christ.** Paul not only confronts and corrects their error with the truth, but he also strongly exhorts them to get back on track, sort out the false teachers among them, crucify their flesh, and walk in the Spirit of God moving forward. There is no time to remain in error and bondage anymore. The call is urgent. And the call is to not just see the problems, but to actually fix the problems and never fall back into such bondage. Paul exhorts them to continue in liberty but to use this liberty to by love serve one another. He calls them to endure hardships and stay true to the cross of Christ. Paul also uses his personal testimony to set the example for this instruction in righteousness.

## II. Overview Outline

- A. Salutation & Introduction Ch 1:1-5
  - Salutation & Setting the tone for the letter.
- B. Paul's Personal Testimony Establishing the true gospel Ch 1:6 - 2:21
  - The seriousness of the gospel, his conversion story, his call and instruction in the gospel, and his devotion to the truth of the gospel.
- C. Paul Instructs why it's Faith and not the Law Ch 3 - 4
  - He reminds them of their beginning in the faith, he uses Abraham to prove faith, he explains the purpose of the law, and he shows the superiority of the new covenant through instruction and allegory.
- D. Paul Exhorts to Stand and Walk in the Spirit Ch 5 - 6
  - He calls them to stand in liberty, to serve one another by love, to walk in the Spirit, to endure hardships, and to stay true to the cross of Christ.

## III. Keys

- A. Key Themes:
  - Paul's personal testimonies, the grace of God, the law, the gospel of Christ, false gospels, true apostles, false brethren, liberty, bondage, faith, the works of the law, the Spirit, the flesh, sons, servants, the promise.
- B. Key Words/Phrases:
  - God, Christ, Spirit, law, faith, flesh, one, gospel, son(s), brethren, justified, under, work(s)(eth), children, promise, liberty.
- C. Key Verses:
  - 1. 1:6-9; the importance and severity of the gospel.
  - 2. 2:16; justification by faith.
  - 3. 2:20; crucified with Christ unto new life.
  - 4. 2:21; the need for Christ's death.
  - 5. 3:6-15; the blessing versus the curse.
  - 6. 3:23-25; the schoolmaster unto Christ.
  - 7. 3:26; children by faith.
  - 8. 4:3-7; from servants to sons.
  - 9. 5:1; stand in liberty.
  - 10. 5:16-25; the flesh and the Spirit.
  - 11. 6:7-8; the law of sowing and reaping.
  - 12. 6:14-15; true glory and what matters.

## IV. Other Good Stuff:

- A. Important Contrasts: In this book Paul teaches by contrasting the truth with the error. These contrasts are vital to have a sound understanding of so that we might be prepared to stand in the truth and defend the truth against the attacks of the enemy. Listed below are some of the contrasts:



1. Apostle of Jesus Christ vs. Apostle of man.
2. The gospel of Christ (his grace, and he himself) vs. a Perverted gospel.
3. Revelation of Christ vs. Taught of man.
4. Justification by faith of Christ vs. "Justification" of the law.
5. Righteousness of the Cross vs. "Righteousness" of the law
6. Hearing of faith vs. Works of the law.
7. Blessing of Abraham vs. Curse of the law.
8. The Promise of faith vs. The Schoolmaster the law
9. The sonship through Christ vs. The servanthood of the law.
10. The son of the free woman vs. The son of the bondwoman.
11. The liberty of Christ vs. The bondage of the law.
12. The walk/fruit of the Spirit vs. The works/fruit of the flesh.
13. The glory of the cross of Christ vs. The glory of man.

B. Fascinating Studies:

1. To compare Paul's conversion testimony and the events that follow in Galatians 1 & 2 with the story of Paul in Acts 9, 11, & 15. Interesting to see the extra revelation given here in Galatians as you synchronize these stories.
2. To study Paul's exposition of Abraham and the promise with the purpose and use of the law (in chapter 3) and how BOTH ultimately worked together to point towards the TRUE deliverance/faith which would be brought in by Christ.
3. To study the adoption of sons and the entrance of the Spirit into our hearts in chapter 4 with other key passages of the Spirit in Romans 8 and 1 John 2 to get a fuller understanding of this inner work.
4. To study out the allegory towards the end of chapter 4 and go back to Genesis 15-18 & 21-22 & 25 to really understand this type that God laid out all the way back in Genesis.
5. The fruit of the Spirit is an important and vital study. To understand each attribute and compare it to it's opposite as found in the rest of the scriptures. Also, the following is interest to take note of: 9 fruit are listed. Galatians is the 9th book of the NT. Galatians has 9 letters. They begin in 5:22 (5+2+2 = 9). The correlation between 9 and fruitfulness.
6. The importance of both "bearing your own burden" and "bearing one another's burdens" to fulfill "the law of Christ," and knowing when to help someone bear their burden as opposed to when they need to learn to carry their own burden.

## **Ephesians**

**Written around A.D. 62**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: Paul wrote the letter of Ephesians to open up some of the riches of Christ to a good, obedient church. He is stressing unity in the church with Jews and Gentiles being made one in Christ and the need to cast off the old life and resist the devil in order to maintain unity and be true to Jesus Christ.
- B. Authorship: Written by Paul the apostle. Some other things to consider regarding Paul and this letter.
  - 1. Paul was the one who brought the truth of the Lord Jesus Christ and the filling of the Holy Ghost to disciples in the city of Ephesus. After preaching in the local synagogue for 3 months, he took the disciples out of the synagogue and taught in the school of Tyrannus for 2 years. The word of God went forth to all of Asia Minor from Paul's ministry in this school. This was the first time that the word of the Lord was preached to Gentiles in that region and God worked mightily through Paul to confirm the truth of this mystery. Acts says that many "special miracles" were done by Paul in Ephesus, and many people's hearts turned to the Lord because of his ministry there. He truly was the apostle of the Lord Jesus to this city. It's important to understand that (humanly speaking) Paul was the one who brought the power of the word of God and the Holy Ghost to Ephesus. Paul invested years and much heart and soul into the work of God in Ephesus. Later on when he was on his way back towards Jerusalem he stopped at Miletus (a neighboring city) and called for all the elders of Ephesus to come see him one last time before his departure. At that gathering, as a true spiritual father, he poured his heart out and warned them of the dangers ahead. Paul clearly loved these saints greatly and did what he could to help them grow properly in the love and knowledge of God so that they might mature into a faithful body of believers fit for the work of the Lord.
- C. Audience: The saints at Ephesus. Some information regarding the region of Ephesus and these saints:
  - 1. Ephesus was a port city on the western coast of modern day Turkey. It lay on the Eastern side of the Aegean Sea. Ephesus was perhaps the most important trading city in the Mediterranean during that time. It was a prominent metropolitan city in the Roman Empire and was known for it's worship to the Roman goddess "Diana" (which was basically the equivalent of the Greek goddess "Artemis"). This city had much wealth and was given to much idolatry. It contained quite a diverse culture as a trade port with a decent sized Jewish population residing there as well.
  - 2. The people that came to faith in the gospel really got on fire for the Lord. Many people in the city responded to the gospel by turning from their witchcrafts and sorceries and burning thousands of silver's worth of books of enchantments and such. There was a genuine repentance unto the true God and faith in Christ amongst the believers in Ephesus. They were zealous to follow the Lord and stand for the truth in the middle of a city given to idolatry and debauchery. Paul therefore revealed some key foundational truths of the mystery of Christ in his epistle and expressed the need for unity and purity in the body of Christ.

D. Analysis:

1. **A revelation of the mystery of Christ to the Gentiles.** Paul helps these saints to see the heavenly, spiritual perspective of what they have been called to in Jesus Christ. He reveals that we as saints have all spiritual blessings in heavenly places. He opens up the truth that we as saints will partake of the same riches of inheritance and power that Christ has received of the Father. He also reveals that not only have we been saved from the powers of darkness and sin, but that we have literally been raised up into heaven in Jesus Christ. He reveals that now in Christ, through his blood and cross, we have been brought into the same citizenship and body as the Jewish believers. He reveals that God the Father himself will receive glory throughout all ages in this new body called the church all because of Jesus Christ. And he lastly reveals that the marriage relationship between male & female that God created in the beginning is ultimately a picture of the greater reality of the relationship between Jesus Christ (like the husband) and his church (like the wife).
2. **A call to true unity in the body of Christ.** Paul exhorts the saints to realize that there are to be no divisions in the body of Christ. He reveals the oneness that we all have in common and exhorts the saints to strive together for this unity. He also reveals that the only way that we as believers can ever grow up into the fulness of Christ is by growing TOGETHER as one body with all the members working together to edify each other in love.
3. **An exhortation to put off the old man and walk in newness of life.** Paul exhorts the saints to walk worthy of the calling and teaching of Jesus Christ. He leaves no room for sin or evil. He calls us to put off the old man and put on the new man by being renewed in the spirit of our mind. This is the call to righteousness and true holiness and there is no reason why we shouldn't walk in these things. He shows this importance in our individual walk with Christ, and in the following key relationships: church, husband/wife, parent/children, and master/servant.
4. **A call to stand against the devil in true spiritual warfare.** Paul calls these believers to stand against the wiles of the devil and not give him an inch. He calls them to engage in the warfare and be fully equipped that they might successfully win the battles in the Lord.

## II. Overview Outline

- |  |               |
|--|---------------|
| A. Salutation & Introduction   | Ch 1:1-5      |
| • Salutation & Setting the tone for the letter.  |               |
| B. Revelation of the Mystery   | Ch 1:6 - 3:21 |
| • He opens up the salvation of Christ, the spiritual realities of the believers, the unity of Jew and Gentile through the cross, and the call of the church. |               |
| C. Call to Walk Worthy of our Calling  | Ch 4 - 6      |

- He calls them to the unity of the faith, to grow up together into the fulness of Christ, to put off the old man and walk in the new, to live in proper important relationships, and to stand and fight against the devil.

### III. Keys

#### A. Key Themes:

- Grace, Heaven (heavenly places), Love, Acceptance, Unity in Christ (oneness), The gospel of salvation, the mystery of the gospel, new life in Christ, relationship(s), spiritual warfare.

#### B. Key Words/Phrases:

- God, Christ, Lord, Jesus, Spirit, one, love, grace, glory, faith, “in Christ”, children, heaven/“heavenly places”, world, together, peace,

#### C. Key Verses:

1. 1:13-14; hearing, believing, the Spirit.
2. 2:13-18; access to the Father.
3. 3:14-21; the calling of the church.
4. 4:3-6; the unity of the faith.
5. 4:11-16; the growth of the church.
6. 4:20-24; putting off the old and putting on the new.
7. 5:1-2; walk in love.
8. 6:10-13; spiritual warfare.

### IV. Other Good Stuff: Important Truths: In this book Paul opens up many key truths concerning salvation and the church of Jesus Christ. Below are some key truths revealed in Ephesians that are worth studying deeper into:

1. The spiritual blessings in Christ. (1:3)
2. Heavenly Places in Christ. (1:3,20; 2:6; 3:10)
3. The choosing and predestination. (1:4-5, 11)
4. The adoption of children. (1:5)
5. Redemption through his blood. (1:7)
6. The fulness of times. (1:10)
7. The sealing of the holy Spirit of promise (the earnest). (1:13-14)
8. The spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him. (1:17-23)
9. The prince of the power of the air and the world. (2:2-3)
10. The Gentiles without Christ. (2:11-12)
11. The peace through the blood and the cross. (2:13-19)
12. The foundation and building of the church. (2:20-22)
13. The mystery of one body revealed. (3:1-10)
14. The love of Christ. (3:19)
15. The fulness of God. (3:19)
16. The one's of the unity of the Spirit. (4:3-8)

17. The ascending and descending of Christ .(4:8-10)
18. The administrative gifts of Jesus to the church. (4:11-16)
19. The cooperative growth of the members of the body. (4:11-16)
20. The vanity of mind and blindness of heart of the lost Gentiles. (4:17-19)
21. The deceitful lusts of the corrupt old man. (4:22 - 5:21)
22. The new man created in righteousness and true holiness. (4:24 - 5:21)
23. The kingdom of Christ and of God and it's inheritance/inheritors. (5:5-6)
24. The fruit of the Spirit. (5:9)
25. The mystery of Christ and the church as husband and wife. (5:22-33)
26. The whole armor of God. (6:10-20)
27. The wiles of the devil. (6:11-16)
28. The rulers of darkness and spiritual wickedness in high places. (6:12)

## **Philippians**

**Written around A.D. 62**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: Paul wrote the letter of Philippians to a mature church(es). Paul shows God's ways are not our ways. His imprisonment led to freedom for the gospel; Christ's humility & death led to his exaltation & life; Paul's loss of his old life led to his gain in Christ; and in instability he had contentment.
- B. Authorship: Written by Paul the apostle. Some other things to consider regarding Paul and this letter.
  1. On Paul's second missionary journey, Paul, Silas, and Timothy were twice forbidden by the Holy Ghost to go into 2 different regions: Asia Minor, and Bithynia. Shortly after this Paul received a vision of a man in Macedonia calling to him for help. At this point, Luke had joined their team and they immediately headed towards Macedonia. They ended up landing at Philippi which was the chief city of Macedonia. Here, they won a lady to the Lord named Lydia and ended up staying with her. As they gathered with the believers by a river side for prayer, a young lady with an evil spirit of divination would harass them. This lady made good money for men by doing soothsaying (like fortune telling). Eventually, Paul couldn't take it any longer and cast out the spirit. This led to her masters arresting Paul and Silas and having them beaten and thrown into jail for the night (because they knew they would lose all their corrupt business). In jail, God worked a miracle and the jailor ended up coming to faith in Christ with his entire family.

2. Paul brought the faith and the gospel to Philippi. He had a special call from Christ to go specifically to that region and preach the gospel. This call came with some serious opposition, persecution, and suffering. However, in all of this, the gospel still prevailed and God showed himself mighty to deliver his men and bring lost souls to faith. Paul knew what it was to lay down his life as an offering for the furtherance of the gospel. He knew what it was to suffer so that God's grace could reach people that it would never normally reach. Such was the case in Philippi.
- C. Audience: The saints at Philippi with the bishops and deacons. Some information regarding the region of Philippi and these saints:
1. Philippi was a chief city in Macedonia about 13km inland. This city was right on the Roman road known as Via Egnatia, and thus, was a strategic trade city. It, like a lot of cities in that Mediterranean region, was a Greek Hellenistic city that had become a Roman city. Thus, the city was a mixture of both Greek and Roman culture.
  2. The believers at Philippi had received Christ in the middle of adverse circumstances and saw the sufferings of the gospel in Paul. They were fully committed from the beginning to Christ and grew in the Lord and in the love and care for fellow believers. They were more mature than most of the other saints that Paul wrote to in other locations. That is why Paul was able to write a letter that is so focused on laying down your life for the gospel and the saints.
- D. Analysis:
1. **A letter to reveal that God's ways are not our ways.** Paul helps these saints to see past the natural and how things appear to be, and rather to understand the big picture of the gospel and work of Christ. In the first chapter Paul assures them that him being imprisoned has furthered the gospel not shut it down. In the second chapter, Paul shows how humility and the mind of Christ in being humbled to the point of death actually leads to exaltation and victory. In the third chapter Paul shows how in him losing everything for Christ actually led to him gaining Christ and that intimacy of fellowship. In the last chapter Paul shows how even in the midst of prison life and extremely uncertain circumstances he could be completely content. The Lord's ways are not our ways and are completely against the ways of the world.
  2. **A call to suffer for Jesus' sake.** Paul wrote this letter from prison and was calling the saints at Philippi to embrace the sufferings of Christ and see it as an honour and a way God reaches others with the gospel. Paul explains that due to his imprisonment the gospel penetrated the palace (of Caesar it's implied). So through Paul's imprisonment, the gospel went into territory it would have never made it. Paul shows the great examples of Christ himself, of Epaphroditus' service to Paul (that led to sickness that almost killed him), and of his own testimony of all that he lost for Jesus Christ. He shows that suffering loss of temporal things is the only way we can gain the eternal spiritual rewards. And the ultimate reward according to Paul, is to be one with Christ, to know him and to be in him.
  3. **A call to the mind of Christ.** Paul exhorts the saints to have the right mindset. This mindset is literally the mind of Christ. All believers are to be of ONE MIND concerning the faith of the gospel. We are all to be likeminded in how we love one

another and esteem others better than ourselves. We are to have the mind of laying down our own good for others benefit. We are to have the same mind in forgetting the things which are in the past and pressing forward to Jesus Christ and his call. We are to allow the peace of God to keep our hearts and minds through Jesus Christ and ultimately we are to set our minds and focus on the things that are true, honest, just, pure, lovely, of good report, of virtue, and praiseworthy. Our mind is to be set on our Lord, his gospel, and others. This is the mind of Jesus Christ that we are ALL called to have.

## II. Overview Outline

- A. Salutation & Introduction Ch 1:1-11
  - Salutation, Introduction, & Paul's heart towards the saints at Philippi.
- B. Paul's Situation in Rome Ch 1:12 - 30
  - Paul's imprisonment and opposition, his desire and expectation to come to Philippi again, and the call to strive together in the faith.
- C. Exhortation to humble service Ch 2
  - A call to love, humility, and esteeming others better than self, Christ's example, the call to shine, Paul's desire to send Timothy, and Epaphroditus' laying down of himself to serve Paul.
- D. Warning against Jews and other false leaders Ch 3
  - Warns about false circumcision, gives his personal testimony, shows the mark to press towards, and gives the hope of Christ's return.
- E. Final Exhortation and Encouragement Ch 4
  - Exhortation to same mind, peace, focus on goodness and purity, and thanks them for their gifts to him, and concludes the letter.

## III. Keys

- A. Key Themes:
  - The gospel, Suffering for Christ, Joy/Rejoicing, Like-mindedness, Humility, Serving/Taking care of the body of Christ, The day of Christ, Finishing well.
- B. Key Words/Phrases:
  - Christ, God, Jesus, Lord, Jesus, Spirit, things, rejoice(ing), gospel, every, mind(ed), joy, fellowship.
- C. Key Verses:
  1. 1:9-11; hearing, A great prayer for believers.
  2. 1:21-24; the strait betwixt two.
  3. 1:29; believing and suffering.
  4. 2:1-4; humble like-mindedness.
  5. 2:5-11; the humility and exaltation of Christ.
  6. 3:7-14; the high mark of Jesus Christ.
  7. 4:6-7; prayer and the peace of God.

8. 4:11-13; contentment and confidence in Christ.

IV. **Other Good Stuff: Important Truths:** In this book, Paul opens up many vital truths regarding our walk in Christ, love and service to other believers, and enduring hardships for our Lord. Here are some important truths to lay hold of, meditate upon, and make a part of our life:

1. Praying for the brethren with thanksgiving and joy. (1:3-4)
2. The confidence that God will finish what he started in you. (1:6)
3. Love to abound more and more in knowledge and judgment. (1:9)
4. How to approve things that are excellent. (1:10)
5. The call to be sincere and without offence till the day of Christ. (1:10)
6. Being filled with the fruits of righteousness by Jesus Christ. (1:11)
7. Personal affliction can lead to furtherance of the gospel. (1:12-14)
8. Intercession by believers can lead to breakthrough for others. (1:19)
9. Living is Christ and to die is GAIN. (1:21)
10. Believers to stand fast in one spirit and one mind striving TOGETHER for the faith of the gospel. (1:27)
11. The gifts of both believing on Christ and suffering for him. (1:29)
12. Like-minded believers having the same love, of one mind and one accord. (2:2)
13. Nothing done in strife or vainglory. (2:3)
14. Living in lowliness of mind: Esteeming others better than ourselves. (2:3)
15. Christ's original position and his descent and humility to humanity and death. (2:6-8)
16. Christ's exaltation. (2:9-11)
17. The working out of our own salvation in fear and trembling. (2:12)
18. Being the blameless and harmless sons of God shining as lights in the midst of a crooked and perverse nation. (2:14-16)
19. The scarcity of those that truly seek the things which are Jesus Christ's. (2:19-23)
20. Serving the brethren to the point of almost dying. (2:25-30)
21. Beware of dogs, evil workers, and the concision. (3:2)
22. The three signs of the true circumcision. (3:3)
23. Losing all for Christ for the excellency of knowing him. (3:7-10)
24. Personal righteousness of the law versus the righteousness of God by faith. (3:9)
25. The desire to know Christ, the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings even unto death. (3:10)
26. Forgetting things behind and pressing forward towards Christ and those things which are ahead. (3:12-15)
27. Identifying the enemies of the cross of Christ. (3:18-19)
28. Keeping our conversation in heaven and looking for the Saviour. (3:20-21)
29. Being mindful of the issues and needs of the saints. (4:2-3)
30. Rejoicing always in the Lord. (4:4)



31. Living in moderation. (4:5)
32. Being full of care for nothing but committing EVERYTHING to the Lord in prayer. (4:6)
33. The power of the peace of God and how to access it. (4:6-7)
34. What things to focus on and think on. (4:8)
35. Learning to be content in any situation, whether abounding or being abased. (4:11-13)
36. The importance and rewards of reaching out to men of God and helping fill their needs. (4:14-19)

## **Colossians**

**Written around A.D. 64**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: Paul wrote the letter of Colossians to all the saints at Colosse. Paul shows that Christ is our redemption, the Creator of all things, the head of the church, the fulness of the Godhead, and the fulfillment of the Old Testament. We are complete in him alone. Any other teaching or philosophy is not after Christ and will spoil our gospel. Thus, we must seek the things above, put off the old man, and put on Christ to walk worthy of him.
- B. Authorship: Written by Paul the apostle and Timothy. Some other things to consider regarding Paul, Timothy, and this letter.
  1. Paul did not establish this church directly. However, it appears that one of Paul's converts, Epaphras, had gone to Colosse and preached the gospel and this church had formed. So in a sense, Paul was almost like the spiritual grandfather of this work. It appears that people in that area were trying to bring Judaizer and Gnostic-type heresies into the church. Epaphras probably brought these things to the attention of Paul and Paul responded by writing letters to both the Colossians and the Laodiceans (he encouraged the people at Colosse to read his epistle to the Laodiceans as well). Paul loved the flock of the Lord; he loved the men that devoted themselves wholly to the Lord in the ministry; and he, above all, loved the Lord Jesus Christ. Seeing these things, it is no surprise that Paul would be inspired by the Holy Ghost to write such a pure and magnificent letter to show the all-sufficiency and majesty of Jesus Christ and his gospel to a church that had been established by one of his spiritual sons and was facing heresy. This was written out

- of a true man of God's heart to protect the flock by both warning them and, most importantly, placing their focus on Jesus Christ and walking in him.
2. Timothy was also Paul's spiritual son in the faith. I think it is semi-important that Paul did not write this letter alone. Since Paul had never been to Colosse and did not directly establish the church, and since some heresy was trying to spoil this church, I think that it was wise to write with Timothy so that the doctrine being revealed is not just one man's word. But in this way, the truth Epaphras had preached was now being confirmed by both his spiritual father and by another brother in Christ.
  3. Paul was the apostle called of Jesus Christ to minister his name to the Gentiles. Paul was called to turn them from darkness to light and to open their eyes to Jesus Christ so that they might receive inheritance through faith. Paul was called to preach "the unsearchable riches" to the Gentiles and make them see "the fellowship of the mystery." The darkness that has tried to seize the Gentiles through the ages comes in many forms: fleshy, worldly, intellectual, religious, etc. Paul shines the light and opens up some of the mystery of Christ in this letter so that these Gentile believers can continue to walk in the light of Jesus Christ.
- C. Audience: The saints and faithful brethren at Colosse. Some information regarding the region of Colosse and these saints:
1. A couple of hundred years before Christ, Colosse had been a chief trading city in Asia Minor (modern-day Turkey). Colosse was located on the Lycus River and was on the great east-west trade route between Ephesus and the Euphrates River. By the time the gospel reached Colosse, it was only a second-rate market town that had been surpassed in trade importance by the nearby cities of Laodicea and Hierapolis.
  2. Colosse was a "spiritually" diverse region. Pagan beliefs, Judaism, and later on, "Gnosticism" (a perversion of Christianity) all were present there. There also was a group of people that tried to mix all these beliefs into one religion (known as "syncretism"), and this group became known as the "angel cult". They evidently believed in adhering to OT customs, staying away from certain foods, promoted a "higher knowledge", and loved angelic/spiritual knowledge and experiences.
  3. The believers at Colosse received the truth of Jesus Christ in the midst of this region of many customs. God provided for them and protected them from doctrinal and spiritual perversion. However, people in the area started trying to bring these strange mixed doctrines into the body of Christ. It's also interesting to note that Philemon was most likely one of the believers in Colosse based upon remarks regarding certain men such as Onesimus, Epaphras, and Archippus in 4:9-17 compared with the remarks in Philemon regarding the same men (amongst some others).
- D. Analysis:
1. **A letter to reveal the all-sufficiency of Jesus Christ.** Paul makes it very clear throughout the first half of the letter that Jesus Christ is EVERYTHING. He is the Redeemer, the Creator, the head of the church, the fulness of the Godhead bodily,

and the fulfillment of the Old Testament. In Christ are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge. Paul makes it very clear that we are complete in Christ alone. We received HIM, we must walk in HIM, and our focus and affections must be set on HIM. This letter truly exalts Jesus Christ as the head and focus of the church. In all things, HE should have the preeminence. Any other doctrine, angel, philosophy, or man must be rejected that seeks to turn the body of Christ away from Jesus Christ as the all-sufficient one.

2. **A call to walk worthy of Christ.** Paul wrote this letter from prison and was calling the saints at Colosse to not only see the greatness of Christ, but to then (as a result of believing and partaking in Christ) walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing. Paul exhorts them to continue in the faith and walk in Christ with the ultimate goal of being presented perfect in Christ Jesus at his appearing. He calls them to mortify the deeds of the flesh and to put on the new man and let God's peace rule in their hearts. He calls them to be true to Christ in EVERY aspect and relationship in their life. He admonishes them to do ALL things heartily as unto the Lord knowing that in the end we will answer to him and be rewarded by him.
3. **A revelation of the mystery of God.** Paul not only shows the all-sufficiency of Christ, but really reveals many aspects of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ. He reveals that the Father is the one who made us to be partakers of this divine inheritance and that he translated us out of darkness and into the kingdom of his dear Son (Christ Jesus). He reveals that we have redemption through Christ's blood, and that Christ is the image of the invisible God. He reveals that all things were created by Christ and that he is the head of the body. He reveals that peace has been made by the blood of his cross and that through the body of his flesh we can be presented unblameable and unreprouvable in the Father's sight. He reveals that Christ is now in us which is the hope of the glory to come. He reveals that all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge are hidden in Christ, that in him dwells all the fulness of the Godhead bodily, and that we are complete in HIM! He reveals the circumcision made without hands and the baptism of the Spirit as operations of God to put off our sins and grant forgiveness. Paul, by the Spirit, really opens up some key understanding of the mystery of God.

## II. Overview Outline

- |    |  |                |
|----|--|----------------|
| A. | Salutation, Introduction, & Prayer   | Ch 1:1-12      |
|    | • Salutation, Introduction, & Paul's heart & prayer for the saints at Colosse. |                |
| B. | The mystery of God   | Ch 1:13 - 2:23 |
|    | 1. Translation and Redemption  | - 1:13-14      |
|    | 2. Christ, the image of God  | - 1:15-18      |
|    | 3. Peace through the blood of his cross  | - 1:19-23      |
|    | 4. The sufferings of Paul and his preaching                                    | - 1:23- 2:3    |
|    | 5. Warnings of false men of God and instruction into the mystery               | - 2:4-23       |
| C. | Exhortation to Live in Christ  | Ch 3:1 - 4:6   |

- A call to seek things above, put off the old man and put on Christ, abide in his word, and do everything unto the Lord in all our relationships.

D. Paul's Companions & Conclusion

Ch 4:7-18

- Final salutations, prayers, and plans concerning Paul's fellow-workers.

### III. Keys

A. Key Themes:

- The Lord Jesus Christ, The Father, The mystery of God, The gospel, Faith in Christ, Walking in Christ, Fellow laborers in Christ working together for the gospel, Enduring to the end.

B. Key Words/Phrases:

- Christ, God, mystery, things, body, wisdom, pray(ers)(ing), minister, dead, "in him", "fellow...", head, perfect, complete.

C. Key Verses:

1. 1:9-11; Paul's prayer for the believers.
2. 1:13-14; deliverance and redemption.
3. 1:15-18; Christ, the image, Creator and head.
4. 1:27-28; the mystery of Christ in us and the work of the ministry.
5. 2:3; all the treasures hidden in Christ.
6. 2:8-10; we are complete in Christ (the fulness of the godhead bodily).
7. 2:16-17; Christ is the body of the OT shadows.
8. 3:1-4; seek things above.
9. 3:14-16; charity, peace, and the word of Christ.
10. 3:23-24; truly serving the Lord.

### IV. Other Good Stuff: Important Truths: In this book, Paul opens up many key truths regarding the Father, regarding Jesus Christ, regarding the mystery of God, regarding his role as a minister, and regarding the believers walk of faith. Here are some important truths to meditate upon and lay to heart:

A. The Father:

1. Has made us meet (fit) to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light. (1:12)
2. Has delivered us from the power of darkness. (1:13)
3. Has translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son. (1:13)
4. It pleased him that in Christ should all fulness dwell. (1:19)
5. He has raised us up through faith as he raised up Jesus. (2:12)

B. Jesus Christ:

1. We have redemption and forgiveness of sins through his blood. (1:14)
2. He is the image of the invisible God. (1:15)
3. All things were created by him (in heaven and earth) and for him. (1:16)

4. He is before all things. (1:17)
5. By him all things consist. (1:17)
6. He is the head of the church (his body). (1:18)
7. He is the beginning and the firstborn from the dead. (1:18)
8. In all things he should have the preeminence. (1:18)
9. All the fulness of the Godhead dwells in him. (1:19; 2:9)
10. He made peace through the blood of his cross. (1:20)
11. He has reconciled all things to himself. (1:20)
12. He has reconciled us in the body of his flesh through death. (1:21-22)
13. All the treasures of wisdom and knowledge are hid in him. (2:3)
14. We are complete in him. (2:10)
15. We are circumcised in him in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh. (2:11)
16. He blotted out the handwriting of ordinances that was against it and took it out of the way by nailing it to his cross. (2:14)
17. He spoiled principalities and powers. (2:15)
18. He made a show of principalities and powers openly (in his resurrection). (2:15)
19. He is the body (of fulfillment) of all the OT shadows. (2:16-17)
20. He is seated at the right hand of God. (3:1)
21. He is our life. (3:4)
22. He will appear and we will appear with him in glory. (3:4)
23. He created the new man in his own image. (3:10)
24. He is all, and he is in all. (3:11)
25. He will grant the reward of the inheritance to believers. (3:24)

C. Paul's role as a minister

1. An apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God. (1:1)
2. A minister of the hope of the gospel (1:23)
3. Rejoices in his sufferings and fills up afflictions in his flesh for the members of Christ's body. (1:24)
4. He is a minister of the mystery of Christ according to the dispensation of God. (1:25-26)
5. He preached Christ: warning every man and teaching every man in all wisdom in order to present every man perfect in Christ Jesus. (1:28)
6. He labored and strove to this end according to Christ's working in him which worked in him mightily. (1:29)
7. He had great conflict that believers hearts would be knit together in love and to all riches of the full assurance of understanding. (2:1-2)
8. He warned the believers about men who would beguile and/or spoil their faith away from Christ unto other philosophies, deceits, traditions, law-keeping, angel-worship, etc. (2:4,8,16,18)

D. Believer's walk of faith:

1. Called to walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing (the Lord). (1:10)
2. Called to be fruitful in every good work. (1:10)
3. Called to increase in the knowledge of God. (1:10)
4. Called to be strengthened with all might unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulness. (1:11)
5. Called to continue in the faith grounded and settled. (1:23)
6. Called to be not moved away from the hope of the gospel. (1:23)
7. Called to walk in Christ Jesus the Lord the same way we received him. (2:6)
8. Called to be rooted and built up in Christ. (2:7)
9. Called to be stablished in the faith (according to the apostle's doctrine). (2:7)
10. Called to abound with thanksgiving. (2:7)
11. Called to beware of other men who will spoil us after other things that are not after Jesus Christ. (2:8)
12. Called to let no man judge us with respect to Old Testament statutes and ordinances. (2:16)
13. Called to let no man beguile us of our reward through false worship and abstaining from certain foods, etc. (2:18-23)
14. We are to seek and set our affection on the things which are above (where Christ is). (3:1-3)
15. We are to mortify our fleshly sins. (3:5)
16. We are to put off others sins of the spirit and tongue. (3:8-9)
17. We are to put on the new man and all his wonderful qualities. (3:10-14)
18. We are to let the peace of God rule in our hearts and be thankful. (3:15)
19. We are to let the word of Christ dwell in us richly in all wisdom. (3:16)
20. We are to teach and admonish one another in psalms, hymns, and spiritual songs. (3:16)
21. We are to sing with grace in our hearts to the Lord. (3:16)
22. We are to do everything in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God by him. (3:17)
23. We are to do all things heartily to the Lord and not unto men. (3:23)
24. We are to continue in prayer and watch with thanksgiving. (4:2)
25. We are to pray for men of God and for open doors for the gospel. (4:3)
26. We are to walk in wisdom to the lost and redeem the time. (4:5)
27. Our speech should always be gracious seasoned with salt. (4:6)

## **1 Thessalonians**

**Written around A.D. 51**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: Paul wrote the letter of 1 Thessalonians to the church at Thessalonica. He wrote to this sold-out young church about how to take care of the young ones in the faith, how to stay pure, and how to look for and prepare for the coming of the Lord Jesus
- B. Authorship: Written by Paul the apostle, Silas, and Timothy. Some other things to consider regarding Paul, Silas, and Timothy, and this letter.
  - 1. Paul and Silas (and quite possibly Timothy) preached the gospel in Thessalonica. A church was formed quickly but came under intense persecution from the envious Jews who ran the local synagogues. Paul and Silas (and Timothy most likely) were forced to flee the city due to the riots. Later on, when Paul was at Athens, he evidently sent Timothy to go back to Thessalonica to find out how the believers were doing under the intense persecution that they heard about. Paul and Silas were so glad when Timothy returned with the good news that the believers were standing fast in the faith of Christ and growing in his grace.
  - 2. Paul himself faced intense persecution under his own people (the Jews). He knew what it was like to receive the gospel with power and desire to see his own people come to the same faith only to see them turn against him and persecute him severely (in many different ways). Paul understood the battles against evil within his own hometown and the heartache associated with seeing your own people not only not believe the gospel, but also become active enemies against the saints. I am certain that due to this experience that Paul had, this gave him a great heart of love and nurturing compassion towards the believers of Thessalonica who had experienced very similar opposition from their own people like what Paul had experienced from the Jews. Because of this suffering, I believe Paul felt a strong kindred spirit to the Thessalonians and really nurtured them like a father or mother would nurture their own children through pain and injury. We truly see this personal and nurturing love in 1st Thessalonians from Paul probably more so than any other letter he wrote that is recorded in the New Testament.
- C. Audience: The church of the Thessalonians. Some information regarding the region of Thessalonica and these saints:
  - 1. Thessalonica was an ancient city of Macedon in northern Greece. It was made the capital of the Roman province of Macedon and became a flourishing city of trade being right on the major trade route to the east. The city was primarily of Greek culture but contained many diverse nationalities along with quite a sizable Jewish population.
  - 2. Paul preached in the synagogues first. Some of the Jews believed the gospel and a “great multitude” of the “devout Greeks” (probably Greek proselytes) along with many of the “chief women” also came to faith in Christ. However, the Jews of Thessalonica became very envious and hostile against the preaching of Jesus as the Messiah (Christ). So they stirred up lewd base people against the faith and

started a major riot and assaulted Jason (one of the believers) and his household along with some of the other men who were leading the early church.

D. Analysis:

1. **A letter of remembrance of the good work of the Lord.** Paul really writes quite a bit in this letter to share in the good memories of what the Lord had done with the believers in Thessalonica and with Paul, Silas, and Timothy. We can see clearly that Paul, Silas, and Timothy loved these believers in Thessalonica and how dear they were to them. Paul just retells a lot of the story of how the believers came to faith, their early days together with the apostles, their continuance in Christ despite persecutions, and the apostles reaching out to see to it they remained steadfast in the Lord. Remembering the early days in Christ and the growth of the gospel and the men that God used to help us is so important and so Paul brings these things to their remembrance.
2. **A letter to prepare them for the coming of the Lord Jesus.** Paul refers to Christ's return more in this short letter than in any of his long letters. He keeps pointing them back towards the truth that everything the believers do, suffer, endure, will all be worth it when Jesus returns. He wants us to be holy and unblameable before him at his coming. He wants us to be prepared for when he comes and not caught off guard like the world (the children of the night). He has promised us to be saved from the wrath to come upon the world. He has also promised that ALL believers in Jesus (both living and dead) will be resurrected and gathered together into one in the clouds when Christ descends from heaven. This is to be a day of joy and rejoicing with our Lord and each other!
3. **A call to walk worthy of God and his kingdom being completely sanctified.** Because Jesus will return one day and the believers will enter into the fulness of the kingdom of God and partake in Christ's glory, Paul exhorts the brethren to live a life of sanctification. Believers are to live free from fornication, to continue in brotherly love, and to study to be quiet and work to provide for themselves and others in need. He exhorts the believers to walk as children of the day and be sober and watchful for the return of the Lord. We are to comfort one another, edify one another, rejoice evermore, pray without ceasing, give thanks, not quench the Spirit of God, not despise prophesyings, prove all things, hold fast that which is good, abstain from all appearance of evil, and allow God to fully sanctify our spirit, soul, and body to be blameless and ready for Jesus Christ!

## II. Overview Outline

- |  |               |
|--|---------------|
| A. Salutation  | Ch 1:1        |
| B. Remembrance & Relationship  | Ch 1:2 - 3:13 |
| • Paul brings the early days of the Thessalonians conversion and the work of Paul, Silas, and Timothy among them to remembrance. |               |
| C. Exhortation to Walk Worthy of the Lord  | Ch 4:1 - 5:28 |



- Paul exhorts the believers to walk worthy unto complete sanctification considering the reality of the return of the Lord (and he explains some things regarding Christ's coming to clear up some confusion).

### III. Keys

#### A. Key Themes:

- The coming of the Lord Jesus, the work of the Lord, the gospel, faith, comfort and joy, Enduring afflictions/persecutions, holiness.

#### B. Key Words/Phrases:

- God, Lord, "Lord Jesus", "Lord Jesus Christ", brethren, joy/rejoice, men, gospel, coming/come, labour (ing).

#### C. Key Verses:

1. 1:9-10; their response to the gospel.
2. 2:12-13; walk worthy.
3. 4:13-17; Christ's return and the resurrection of believers.
4. 5:14-24; the call of our walk as believers.

### IV. Other Good Stuff:

#### A. The gospel of God: This letter brings out some important truths about the gospel of God, it's effect, and those who preach it.

1. It comes in word, power, the Holy Ghost, and in much assurance. (1:5)
2. It causes people to turn from idols to the true living God and to wait for the return of Jesus Christ to deliver us from the wrath to come. (1:9-10)
3. It is to be preached not to please men, but to please God. (2:4)
4. It should be preached without charge by men who are willing to give their own souls and labour with their own hands. (2:8-9)
5. It effectually works only in those who receive it as the word of God (not as the word of men). (2:13)

#### B. Love for God's people: This letter really shows the heart of love that Paul and his companions had for the people they won to the Lord Jesus in Thessalonica. In the first 3 chapters there are many dear and important heart truths revealed by Paul regarding his heart towards them. It is important to read these chapters and really grow in this type of heart for God's people (especially if you desire to be in ministry).

#### C. Commandments of the Lord Jesus: There are a few vital commandments given in chapter 4 that all believers (especially Gentiles) must OBEY and walk in.

1. No FORNICATION! God has called us unto HOLINESS. That is why he has given us the HOLY Spirit. He wants to sanctify us completely. We must not walk as lost Gentiles. (4:1-8)
2. LOVE the brethren. We are commanded by Christ to love one another. This is not just in word, but also through action and giving. Talk is cheap. (4:9-10)
3. WORK honestly. We are to work honestly and mind our own business. Whether we work for an employer, do our own business, or work for the Lord, we are to

work honestly so that we may have lack of nothing and not be a burden to others.  
(4:11-12)

D. The Return of the Lord Jesus: This letter opens up some important realities about the return of the Lord Jesus for his saints. Paul also describes the order of some of the events that will happen when Jesus returns:

1. Jesus will descend from heaven himself with the souls of those who are already in heaven with him and then we will hear: (4:16)
  - a. A shout
  - b. A voice of the archangel
  - c. The trump of God
2. The dead in Christ will rise first. (Their souls will be reunited with their bodies but their bodies will be transformed into eternal spiritual bodies like Jesus.) (4:13-16)
3. The believers who are alive and remain will be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air (we too will be transformed into our new bodies in an instant. (4:17)

\* See 1 Corinthians 15:42-54 & Philippians 3:20-21 for above points.

E. Important Commands: At the end of the letter, Paul gives a bunch of important commands/functions to fulfill in our walk in the Lord and in our relationships with other believers. These are such good exhortations to walk in and when we do, many of the conflicts and issues we see amongst believers quickly vanish. This list truly will help us grow into spiritual maturity one with another and will allow our God to do his whole (complete) work of sanctification in us:

1. Know those over you in the Lord and esteem them very highly in love for their work's sake.
2. Be at peace among yourselves.
3. Warn the unruly.
4. Comfort the feebleminded.
5. Support the weak.
6. Be patient toward all men.
7. Don't render evil for evil.
8. Always follow that which is good.
9. Rejoice evermore.
10. Pray without ceasing.
11. In every thing give thanks.
12. Don't quench the Spirit.
13. Don't despise prophesyings.
14. Prove (Test/Examine) all things!
15. Hold fast that which is good.
16. Abstain from all appearance of evil.

## 2 Thessalonians

Written around A.D. 53

### I. The Book:

- A. Synopsis: Paul wrote this follow-up letter to the church at Thessalonica to show them the signs, purpose and prerequisites of the coming of Christ. Paul reveals details about the Antichrist and deception of the last days so we will not be ignorant; and he admonishes all men to work as they wait for Christ.
- B. Authorship: Written by Paul the apostle, Silas, and Timothy. See the “Authorship” section for 1 Thessalonians for additional information. Some other things to consider regarding Paul and this letter.
  - 1. Paul was given an “abundance of revelations” concerning heavenly things and mysteries of the gospel. He had sound understanding from Jesus Christ on the end-times and Christ’s return. He understood the apostasy of the end days and the work of the mystery of iniquity that would grow stronger and stronger until the man of sin himself would be revealed. He understood how Jesus would be the one who would come to destroy this man of sin and all who refused his gospel, and how he would save and be glorified in those that believe.
- C. Audience: The church of the Thessalonians. See the “Audience” section of 1 Thessalonians to see more about the region and church in Thessalonica.
- D. Analysis:
  - 1. **A letter to confirm a church that is enduring persecution.** The Thessalonians faced some serious opposition and persecution upon believing in Christ. It appears that this persecution did not lighten up but continued even to the point of this second letter that Paul wrote to them. Paul wrote this letter to assure them that when Jesus returns all the injustices and persecution will come to an end. He assured them that Jesus will judge and punish those who have done evil against them, and that they (the believers) will be glorified with Christ.
  - 2. **A letter to clarify some confusion regarding the return of Christ.** Just as today, there were many back then saying that Christ could come at any moment. And specifically, there were people saying and writing letters (some falsely claiming they were written by Paul) that Christ was coming back very soon. Paul makes it very clear that NO ONE should be deceived regarding this matter. Christ WILL NOT come until two things happen (these must happen first, before Christ comes). First, there must be a falling away. And secondly, the man of sin (known as the Antichrist) must be revealed in the temple claiming that he is God. He explains the strong delusion that God will send and the damnation that will come upon those who follow after Satan’s lying signs and wonders. Paul makes it very clear and admonishes the believers to let no man deceive them concerning the return of Christ and the gathering of his saints.
  - 3. **A command to work honestly.** Paul already wrote to these believers concerning this matter in the first letter. Evidently, not everyone took heed to his instruction. So Paul makes it very clear that it is a command of the Lord Jesus that men work honestly and eat their own bread. Paul instructs them that if any “brother” refuses

to do so, that they must withdraw themselves from such a “brother” and have no company with him. However, he tells them not to treat them as enemies, but to admonish them as brethren.

## II. Overview Outline

- A. Salutation Ch 1:1-2
- B. Enduring Persecution until Jesus Comes Ch 1:3-12
  - Paul encourages the believers in their persistence through afflictions and persecutions and assures them of restitution when Jesus comes back.
- C. Understanding the End-Times Ch 2
  - Paul explains the 2 key things that must happen before the Lord returns and explains why God will bring damnation on the world, and how the believers are saved.
- D. Walking Properly until Christ Comes Ch 3
  - Paul explains how believers must stay away from evil and continue to faithfully work until the Lord returns. Any brother who does not consent is to be admonished and withdrawn from.

## III. Keys

- A. Key Themes:
  - Enduring afflictions/persecutions, the coming of the Lord Jesus, judgment and damnation on the wicked, salvation for the saints, the man of sin/the Wicked (the Anti-Christ), comfort and joy, honest work.
- B. Key Words/Phrases:
  - God, Lord, “Lord Jesus Christ”, brethren, word, coming/come, work, day, believe(d), power, revealed, faith, glory, tribulation(s).
- C. Key Verses:
  - 1. 1:7-10; the 2nd coming of Jesus Christ.
  - 2. 2:3-4; the 2 prerequisites for the return of the Lord.
  - 3. 2:13-14; our salvation and call.
  - 4. 3:10,12; the duty to work.

## IV. Other Good Stuff:

- A. Key Number 2: This book has so many pairs of things that are put together. I will not show you all of them but will just list a few to get you started:
  - The church is in 2 people: God the Father, and the Lord Jesus.
  - 2 things are offered to the church: Grace and Peace
  - Paul gives thanks for 2 things: their growth of faith, and their abounding charity.
  - The apostles glory in 2 things: the believers patience, and faith.
  - The church is enduring 2 things: persecutions, and tribulations.
  - Jesus will take vengeance on 2 groups of people: those who do not know God, and those who do not obey the gospel of Christ.

- Their punishment will keep them from 2 things: the presence of the Lord, and the glory of his power.
  - Jesus will come for 2 things in his people: to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all them that believe.
- B. Important Information regarding the revelation of Christ and Antichrist: This book gives quite a bit of key information regarding the return of the Lord, his judgment upon the wicked, the falling away, the Antichrist (the man of sin), the deception of the last days, etc. Below are some key things to consider and study more in-depth regarding the end-times.
1. The revelation of the Lord Jesus:
    - a. Is a day of rest for the church of Jesus Christ.
    - b. Jesus will be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels.
    - c. He will come in flaming fire to bring vengeance upon those who do not know God and who do not obey the gospel.
    - d. They will be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord and the glory of his power.
    - e. He will come to be glorified in his saints, and admired in all that believe.
    - f. This day cannot come until there comes: a falling away, and the man of sin is revealed.
    - g. He will consume this Wicked man of sin with the spirit of his mouth and the brightness of his coming.
  2. The revelation of the Wicked man of sin:
    - a. He is the son of perdition (the man of sin).
    - b. He will oppose and exalt himself above everything else that people worship or call God.
    - c. He will sit in the temple of God and declare himself to be God.
    - d. Something/Someone is withholding (hindering) him from being revealed.
    - e. The mystery of iniquity is already at work preparing the world for this revelation of the Wicked.
    - f. When he is revealed he will come with the power of Satan in all power, signs, and lying wonders.
    - g. He will come with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in those who perish.
    - h. He will bring strong delusion (sent by God) to seal the lost world's damnation (those who rejected the truth).
  3. The falling away:
    - a. This must come before the man of sin is revealed.
    - b. The mystery of iniquity is working to bring this about.
    - c. Something/Someone is hindering the revelation of the Wicked, and, therefore, is allowing this mystery of iniquity to continue to work to bring about the falling away.

## **1 Timothy**

**Written around A.D. 65**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: Paul wrote this letter like a mini church manual to Timothy who was a young bishop (overseer of a church). He wrote on topics such as church doctrine, discipline, conduct of men and women, ordination of bishops and deacons, care of widows, and warnings about straying from the truths of the word and the love of money (problems for leaders).
- B. Authorship: Written by Paul the apostle. Some things to consider regarding Paul and this letter.
  - 1. Paul was hand-chosen by Jesus Christ as an apostle to go to the Gentiles, preach the gospel, and quickly establish churches in different towns and cities. Paul was a tent-maker by trade. He knew how to make tents for people to camp in and/or live in that provided simple, humble, and reliable shelter from the elements, and yet, was able to be quickly assembled, disassembled, and moved. God gave him a similar ability in the spiritual to be able to set up quick, sound, humble and moveable churches that could be safe-havens from the world and places of refuge with the Lord Jesus. Due to this understanding given to him by God, one of his most important functions in the early churches was to identify the man/men who he could impart the same wisdom to that could oversee the house of God (church) once he moved on. He needed these men to be sound in the key things that allow the church of Jesus Christ to remain steadfast, spotless, pure, and grow properly both in converts and leaders.
- C. Audience: Timothy (also known as “Timotheus”). Some information regarding the man Timothy:
  - 1. “Timothy” means “honouring God” or “honoured by God”. And there is no doubt upon learning of his life that both were true in him. He was half Jewish and half Greek. His father was a Greek (it appears he was unconverted), and his mother (Eunice) was a faithful Jewish woman who was devout in the faith of the Lord. His grandmother Lois was also a woman of faith. Timothy was raised in the Old Testament scriptures from his youth by both his mother and grandmother. He probably, no doubt, attended synagogue regularly in his hometown city of Lystra (located in Southern, Central Asia Minor in the region of Lycaonia). He believed in the Lord along with his mother and grandmother while growing up. He had a tender heart to God and a desire to serve the Lord in obedience.
  - 2. It is highly likely that when Paul and Barnabas came to Lystra in Acts 14:6-18, that Timothy, his mother, and grandmother all came to faith in Jesus as the Christ (Messiah). We’re not certain of this, but what we do know is that by the time Paul returned to Lystra 3 years later in Acts 16:1-3, that Timothy was a disciple of Christ who was faithfully serving the Lord and the churches in that region. Paul saw his heart, his character, and his eagerness to serve the Lord and brought him with him on what is called his “2nd Missionary Journey”. Timothy proved to be faithful to the Lord Jesus and a true servant to the brothers and sisters in Christ. He appears to be like Paul’s “John” (John was Jesus’ closest and most beloved disciple that

stayed true to him no matter what). Timothy stuck with Paul and was true to assisting and ministering both to and with Paul through everything. Paul saw his growth, and would therefore leave him in key cities to help with the churches and send him to other areas to fulfill certain missions on behalf of the work of the Lord.

3. It appears that around A.D. 64 Paul left Timothy at Ephesus to be the first officially ordained bishop (overseer) of that church. Thus, Paul wrote this letter of 1 Timothy to instruct him in key things to know and attend to in order for this church to remain pure and flourish in the Lord.

D. Analysis:

1. **A letter to establish and maintain order in the house of God.** Paul wrote this letter to lay out the key foundations upon which the house of God (the church) is to be built on and walk in. The first thing that Paul addresses is the need to charge other men to preach the pure doctrine of the gospel of Jesus Christ (not fables, not genealogies, not the law). He then exhorts Timothy to make the church a house of prayer for ALL people. He charges them to lift up prayers for every one with the Lord's desire that all would be saved, and he specifically charges the men to lead in this call to prayer. He then charges Timothy to exhort women to dress and behave modestly and to remain silent in the instruction in the house of God. He wants to see women grow in holiness and truly reflect the glory of the Lord and not draw attention and glory to themselves. He then teaches Timothy on how to identify and ordain worthy bishops and deacons to oversee and serve the church. He teaches Timothy on how to deal with and properly conduct himself with elders and peers. He explains how to identify widows that are worthy of the full support of the church and those widows which are not worthy to be supported by the church. He tells Timothy to provide for elders that rule well. He explains how to deal with accusations and sin amongst the elders. He exhorts Timothy to charge those that have riches to not trust in their riches but to be generous and giving towards both the needy and the work of God.
2. **A letter to charge Timothy to personal accountability and faithfulness.** Paul makes this very clear that this job of overseeing the house of God is not some business operation or preferred position with great benefits. Paul makes this very clear that this is a holy calling of Jesus Christ and a sacred charge to be true to Jesus Christ and his gospel. Paul exhorts Timothy that first and foremost he must be true to Christ and take heed personally to walk in obedience to the Lord Jesus. Timothy must not be just a good director of people (but he himself not be true to the gospel). Timothy must hold, meditate upon, and study the word of God faithfully. He must maintain a pure heart and a good conscience in all things. He must set the example for the believers in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, and in purity. He must exercise the spiritual gifts of God given to him for the edification of the body. He must conduct himself humbly and wisely amongst the believers. He must refuse other people's "wisdom" (fables, etc) and stay true to the word of God. He must preach towards godly edifying in faith. He must do nothing by partiality or preference but be honest, fair, and true to Jesus Christ. He must look after his own well-being spiritually and physically. He must flee the love of money and the desire

for riches and remain content in Jesus Christ. This call is a holy calling to our eternal, immortal King.

3. **A call to reject error and false doctrine and help others to do the same.** Paul warns Timothy of many errors, corruptions, and false doctrines that will assault Timothy as a bishop of the church. He exhorts him to stand fast and wage war against these things and remain true and steadfast to the true gospel of Jesus Christ. He warns of fables, endless genealogies, and things that only lead to fruitless questions but don't edify. He warns about people who want to teach God's law but have no idea what they are talking about. He explains the purpose of the law and how to use it properly. He warns about letting women begin to teach in the church. He warns about seducing spirits and doctrines of devils that will lead people to speak lies in hypocrisy. He warns about people forbidding people to marry, and commanding people to not eat meat. He warns of profane old wives' fables that focus on physical diet and exercise instead of true godliness. He warns about evil men who do not consent to the Lord Jesus' doctrine, but instead waste time on meaningless questions that lead to envy, strife, railing, evil surmising, etc. And he warns about the evil "prosperity" doctrine that "gain is godliness". He warns how ungodly men will make it appear that the more godly you are the more you gain. Paul lastly warns him of profane vain babbling and false science that tries to oppose the truth of God and his word. He warns Timothy that some claim to believe God while professing these errors and thereby have departed from the faith. Timothy is warned to reject ALL attacks of error and false doctrine and to HOLD to the truth no matter what.

## II. Overview Outline

- |  |           |
|--|-----------|
| A. Salutation  | Ch 1:1-2  |
| B. Introductory Charge   | Ch 1:3-20 |
| • Paul charges Timothy to charge others to stay to true doctrine, a pure heart, and a good conscience and not swerve out of the way.                                       |           |
| C. Setting the house of God in order   | Ch 2 - 3  |
| • Importance of prayer, women's modesty and role, requirements of bishops and deacons and their wives.   |           |
| D. False ministers vs. a Good minister of Christ   | Ch 4      |
| • False doctrines, lies, and fables that pervert the gospel as opposed to continuing in true faith and devotion to the Lord personally and publicly.                       |           |
| E. Conduct in the house of God   | Ch 5      |
| • Dealing with people, widows, and elders in purity, honour, and fairly.   |           |
| F. Final charges and warnings  | Ch 6      |
| • Final charges to stay true to Christ and his gospel and to charge others to, and some final warnings against false men of God, the love of money, and other oppositions. |           |



### III. Keys

#### A. Key Themes:

- Pure Doctrine, the word of God, faith, purity, holy charges, prayer, godly/holy living/conduct (male & female), faithfulness, holding to the truth, church leadership, false doctrine/errors/lies/corruptions.

#### B. Key Words/Phrases:

- God, "Jesus Christ", "Christ Jesus", good, faith(ful), man/men, let, things, "these things", godliness, doctrine, charge, teach, honour, pure/purity, widow(s), women, own, profane.

#### C. Key Verses:

1. 1:5; the true end of our doctrine (commandment).
2. 1:15; why Jesus came into the world.
3. 2:3-6; the will of God and Christ the only mediator.
4. 3:15-16; the church and the great mystery of godliness.
5. 4:12-16; the call of a true man of God in purity and doctrine.
6. 5:21-22; no partiality and sober consideration of ordination.
7. 6:6; true gain.
8. 6:10; the warning of the love of money.
9. 6:11-12; fleeing, following after, and fighting the good fight.

### IV. Other Good Stuff: This book is filled with practical exhortations and charges to the truth and holiness. It is filled with how to deal with different important functions in the church. Below are some lists of things that Paul gives Timothy charge over and for order in the house of God.

#### A. Personal Charges/Responsibilities

1. To war a good warfare. (1:18)
2. To hold faith and a good conscience. (1:19)
3. To lift up supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks for all men and leaders (2:1-2)
4. To only lay hands on and ordain bishops and deacons who fulfill all the requirements found in chapter 3. (3:1-13)
5. To refuse profane and old wives' fables. (4:7)
6. To exercise unto godliness (not bodily exercise). (4:7-8)
7. To be an example to the believers (in word, conversation, charity, spirit, faith, and purity). (4:12)
8. To give attendance to: reading, exhortation, and doctrine. (4:13)
9. To not neglect the spiritual gift given to him. (4:14)
10. To meditate upon the things of God. (4:15)
11. To give himself wholly (completely) to them. (4:15)
12. To take heed to himself. (4:16)
13. To take heed to the doctrine. (4:16)

14. To continue in the true doctrine in order to save himself and those that listen to him. (4:16)
15. To not rebuke elders but intreat them as fathers and mothers. (5:1)
16. To intreat fellow brothers and sisters with all purity. (5:1-2)
17. To honour widows indeed (provide for them) and refuse all other widows. (5:3-16)
18. To receive no private, single accusation against any elders (only before 2 or 3 witnesses). (5:19)
19. To publicly rebuke an elder that sins before all. (5:20)
20. To observe these commandments without personal preference or partiality. (5:21)
21. To not lay hands on any man quickly (for leadership). (5:22)
22. To keep himself pure. (5:22)
23. To withdraw from false men of God who do not submit to Christ's doctrine of godliness but preach material prosperity instead. (6:3-5)
24. To be content with food and raiment (clothes). (6:8)
25. To flee the love of money, quick gain, and men of false gospels. (6:11)
26. To follow after: righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness. (6:11)
27. To fight the good fight of faith. (6:12)
28. To lay hold on eternal life. (6:12)
29. To keep this commandment without spot and unrebukeable until the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. (6:14)
30. To keep that which is committed to his trust. (6:20)
31. To avoid profane and vain babblings. (6:20)
32. To avoid oppositions of false science. (6:20)

B. Charges he is to commit to others:

1. Charge faithful men to teach no other doctrine (only the pure doctrine of Christ) and to godly edifying in faith. (1:3-4)
2. Charge these men to not give heed to fables and endless genealogies which just lead to more and more pointless questions. (1:4)
3. To encourage men to pray every where lifting up holy hands without wrath and doubting. (2:7)
4. To encourage women to adorn themselves in modest apparel (not costly, gaudy dress...) (2:9)
5. To encourage women to adorn themselves in good works. (2:10)
6. To let women learn in silence and not to teach nor to usurp authority over the man. (2:11-12)
7. To put the brethren in remembrance of the lies of seducing spirits and the truth of God's word. (4:1-6)
8. To charge family members of widows to provide for their own widows (sons, nephews, etc...). (5:4-8)
9. To charge elder widows to continue in supplications and prayers night and day and not pursue fleshly/worldly pleasures. (5:5-7)
10. To encourage younger widows to marry a godly man, bear children, guide the house, and give no occasion to the adversary. (5:11-15)

11. To charge those who are rich to not be high-minded, or trust in riches, but to trust in God, and to do good, and be rich in good works, ready to give and willing to find out others needs. (6:17-18)

C. Warnings about Errors and False ministers:

1. Men who desire to be teachers of the law but have swerved aside from following after charity out of a pure heart, a good conscience, and faith unfeigned. These men have turned aside after “vain jangling” (they make a lot of noise, but it produces no godly fruit). They don’t know what they’re talking about. (Hymenaeus and Alexander were such men). (1:5-7,19-20)
2. Men who have departed from the faith and given place to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils. They speak lies in hypocrisy and have their conscience seared. They forbid people to marry and command people to not eat meat. They are contrary to the ways of the new covenant of Christ. (4:1-6)
3. Profane and Old wives’ fables that focus on diet and exercise as the “keys” to a fulfilled life (instead of godliness). (4:6-8)
4. Men who teach things other than the doctrine of godliness and they do not consent/submit to the words of our Lord Jesus. These men are proud, they know nothing, they fight over words, their ministries lead to envy, strife, railings, evil surmising, and perverse disputes of corrupt minds. They suppose that gain is godliness (“prosperity gospel”). (6:3-5)
5. Men who desire to be rich (either in the world or in ministry). Men who chase after money and gain. These men fall into temptations and snares and many foolish and hurtful lusts which will eventually drown them in destruction and perdition. They err from the faith and pierce themselves through with many sorrows. (6:9-10)
6. Profane and vain babblings and oppositions of false science. All these seemingly clever “facts” and “theories” that are contrary to the word of God. (6:20-21)

D. Attributes Required for Bishops & Deacons:

1. Personal: Blameless, vigilant, sober, of good behavior, not given to wine, not greedy of money (filthy lucre), patient, not covetous.
2. Relational: Given to hospitality, no striker, not a brawler, not double-tongued, and has good report amongst non-believers.
3. Familial: The husband of one wife, rules his own house well, has his children in subjection with all gravity; wife must be grave, sober, not slanderer, faithful in all things.
4. Ministry: Must be able and ready to teach, must not be a novice, must hold the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience.

## 2 Timothy

Written around A.D. 68

### I. The Book:

- A. Synopsis: This is Paul's final letter recorded in the scriptures before he died. He pours his heart, soul, spirit, mind and strength into one powerful little letter to pass the torch to Timothy, his dearly beloved son in the faith. He challenges him to endure hardness as a good soldier of Christ and to fight until the end as Paul had no matter what the cost.
- B. Authorship: Written by Paul the apostle. Some things to consider regarding Paul and this letter.
  - 1. Paul was called by Jesus Christ as "a chosen vessel unto [him]." Jesus said that he would "shew him how great things he must suffer for [Jesus'] name sake." Paul was called to suffer greatly for Jesus. But Paul knew that all the sufferings that he faced would not be "worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us." He knew that once he finished his course and went home to heaven that everything would be worth it. He knew the sobriety of his call as an apostle and preacher of this new testament gospel of Christ and he committed his whole life to fulfilling this call worthily. He also lived his life to not only fulfill his call, but also to help others hear their call and fulfill their part in the body of Christ. This was his call. And this call took him through many sufferings and afflictions. He was beaten, stoned, shipwrecked, arrested multiple times, ridiculed, mocked, hated, despised, betrayed, and forsaken. He ended up in a Roman prison pretty much all alone with many of his fellow workers in the gospel forsaking him for "greener pastures"
- C. Audience: Timothy (also known as "Timotheus"). Some information regarding the man Timothy:
  - 1. Timothy was Paul's spiritual son in the Lord. Timothy was faithful both to God and to assist and serve Paul in all things. Wherever Paul needed him or sent him, Timothy was faithful to fill the need. Timothy loved the Lord and loved serving the Lord's people. It appears that Timothy was not a bold and daring leader or a pioneer type of person. It appears that he was more gentle and timid and more of a homebody. Timothy needed Paul's example and guidance to learn how to be courageous and strong in faith. He needed that time with Paul to learn how to do the work of an evangelist. Timothy loved Paul very much and Paul loved Timothy probably even more. Paul saw a man in Timothy that he knew would carry forward the gospel of Jesus Christ in faithfulness and honesty.
- D. Analysis:
  - 1. **A letter to exhort a man of God to be true to Jesus Christ both personally and in the ministry.** Paul wrote this letter to exhort Timothy to be strong in the spiritual battles. He charged him to walk in power, love, and a sound mind. He exhorted him to partake of the afflictions of Jesus Christ. He called him to hold fast to the sound words of the Lord and to commit those things to other faithful men who would be able to teach others also. He charged him to endure hardness as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. He exhorted him to study the word to be approved unto God, rightly dividing the word of truth. He charged him to continue in ALL the holy

scriptures unto perfection throughly furnished unto good works. He charged him to continue to preach the word whether in season or out of season. He charged him to reprove and rebuke and exhort others whether or not they wanted it. He exhorted him to be watchful, endure afflictions, and do the work of an evangelist. This is a power letter where an older man in the faith charges a younger man in the faith to stay true to Jesus Christ in all things no matter what.

2. **A letter to warn Timothy of the apostasy, fables, and errors of the ungodly in the last days.** Paul is up front with Timothy of the oppositions that will come against the gospel and true godliness. He warns of profane and vain babblings that lead to more and more ungodliness and exhorts Timothy to shun them. He warns of youthful lusts and charges Timothy to flee them. He warns of the great ungodliness and apostasy of the last days and the false form of godliness that it will disguise itself in and the great resistors of the truth who will be reprobate concerning the faith. He warns of the evil men and seducers that will wax worse and worse deceiving and being deceived. He warns of “teachers” that will just tickle people’s ears with good stories and fables and not preach the truth of Christ. In all these things, Timothy was warned to spot them, point them out, and stay pure and separate from all such evil and ungodliness that tries to disguise itself as godliness.

## II. Overview Outline

- |   |           |
|---|-----------|
| A. Salutation & Affection   | Ch 1:1-5  |
| B. Introductory Charge  | Ch 1:6-18 |
| <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Paul charges Timothy to stir up the gift of God in him, to not be ashamed of the Lord or Paul, and to hold fast sound words as Paul had.</li> </ul>          |           |
| C. Charge to be Strong in Grace   | Ch 2      |
| <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Timothy is to commit the gospel to faithful men; to endure hardness as a good soldier; to suffer with Christ; to stay pure; and help save others.</li> </ul> |           |
| D. Warning of the Perilous last days  | Ch 3      |
| <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Men will be lovers of self, unholy, fierce, resist the truth; Timothy must endure persecution and continue in all scripture to become perfect.</li> </ul>    |           |
| E. Final Charge   | Ch 4      |
| <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Paul charges Timothy to be true to Jesus Christ in the ministry no matter what the cost; Paul finished his course; Timothy can do the same.</li> </ul>       |           |

## III. Keys

- A. Key Themes:
  - Power, faithfulness, endurance, faith, holding to the truth, pure doctrine, the word of God, purity, false doctrine/corruptions, evil.
- B. Key Words/Phrases:
  - God, Lord, Jesus, Christ, “Christ Jesus”, faith, men, things, truth, endure, ashamed, doctrine, sound, suffer, afflictions, persecution(s).

C. Key Verses:

1. 1:7; no spirit of fear, but power, love, & sound mind.
2. 1:13; hold fast sound words.
3. 2:1-4; charge to be strong as a good soldier.
4. 2:15; charge to study the word of truth.
5. 3:12-13; persecution and deception.
6. 3:14-17; importance of all scripture.
7. 4:1-5; final charge to be true in the ministry.
8. 4:6-8; Paul's good finish and hope.
9. 4:16-18; the Lord standing with Paul and delivering him.

IV. Other Good Stuff: This book is filled with practical exhortations and charges to the truth and ministry. Below is a list of things that Paul exhorts Timothy to be true to and fulfill.

A. Charges & Exhortations to Timothy:

1. To stir up the gift of God within him. (1:6)
2. To not be ashamed of the testimony of the Lord nor of Paul. (1:8)
3. To be a partaker of the afflictions of the gospel (1:8)
4. To hold fast the form of sound words in faith and love. (1:13)
5. To keep the good thing committed unto him by the Holy Ghost. (1:14)
6. To be strong in the grace of Christ Jesus. (2:1)
7. To commit the truth to faithful men that will be able to teach others. (2:2)
8. To endure hardness as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. (2:3)
9. To consider what Paul says so the Lord can give him understanding. (2:7)
10. To remember that Jesus Christ was raised from the dead! (2:8)
11. To put the believers in remembrance of the truths of faith and suffering and to charge them to not strive about words of no profit. (2:14)
12. To study the word to be approved unto God by rightly dividing the word of truth. (2:15)
13. To shun profane and vain babblings that will lead to more and more ungodliness and will eat away like a canker. (2:16-17)
14. To flee youthful lusts. (2:22)
15. To follow after righteousness, faith, charity, and peace with those that call on the Lord out of a pure heart. (2:22)
16. To avoid foolish and unlearned questions. (2:23)
17. To continue in the truth he has learned according to the holy scriptures. (3:14)
18. To preach the word. (4:2)
19. To be instant in season and out of season. (4:2)
20. To reprove, rebuke, and exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine. (4:2)
21. To watch in all things (be watchful). (4:5)
22. To endure afflictions. (4:5)
23. To do the work of an evangelist. (4:5)
24. To make full proof of his ministry. (4:5)

25. To be diligent to come and see Paul. (4:9,21)
  26. To be ware of Alexander the coppersmith (a man of great evil). (4:14)
- B. Important truths about the call and word:
1. God has not given us the spirit of fear, but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind. (4:7)
  2. The gospel comes with afflictions. (1:8)
  3. God has saved us and called us with a holy calling; this is not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace. (1:9)
  4. This salvation and calling was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began but is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour. (1:10)
  5. Jesus Christ has abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel. (1:10)
  6. The sound words of God must be held fast in faith and love. (1:13)
  7. To be a good soldier we must not be entangled again with the affairs of this life. (2:4)
  8. If we strive for masteries, we must strive lawfully for the crown. (2:5)
  9. The husbandman who labours is the first partaker of the fruits. (2:6)
  10. Jesus Christ was raised from the dead according to the gospel. (2:8)
  11. If we are dead with Christ, we shall also live with him. (2:11)
  12. If we suffer with Christ, we shall also reign with him. (2:12)
  13. If we deny Christ, he will deny us. (2:12)
  14. We must study the word of truth and rightly divide it to be approved unto God as workmen that will not be ashamed. (2:15)
  15. The foundation of God stands sure (certain, sound). (2:19)
  16. The seal of the foundation of God is: "The Lord knoweth them that are his," and "Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity." (2:19)
  17. We must purge ourselves from vessels of dishonor (iniquity), so that we might be vessels of honor that are sanctified and meet for the Master's use. (2:21)
  18. The servant of the Lord must not strive, but be gentle to all men. (2:24)
  19. The servant of the Lord must be apt (able and ready) to teach. (2:24)
  20. The servant of the Lord must instruct those that oppose themselves in meekness so that they might: (2:25)
    - a. Be given repentance from God to acknowledge the truth. (2:25)
    - b. Recover themselves out of the snare of the devil (they are taken captive by him easily at his will). (2:26)
  21. We must know that in the last days perilous times will come. (3:1-13)
  22. All who live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution. (3:12)
  23. The holy scriptures (even the Old Testament which is what Paul was referring to) are able to make you wise unto salvation. (3:15)
  24. Salvation comes through faith in Christ Jesus. (3:15)
  25. All scripture is given by inspiration of God. (3:16)
  26. All scripture is profitable for doctrine, reproof, correction, and instruction in righteousness. (3:16)

27. All scripture is required for the man of God to become perfect, throughly furnished unto all good works. (3:17)
28. The Lord Jesus Christ shall judge EVERYONE (quick and dead). (4:1)
29. Jesus will judge at his appearing and his kingdom. (4:1)
30. The time will come when people will not endure sound doctrine: (4:3)
  - a. They shall heap to themselves teachers (to itch their ears). (4:4)
  - b. They shall turn away from the truth. (4:4)
  - c. They shall be turned unto fables. (4:4)
31. We are called to fight a good fight, finish our course, and keep the faith. (4:7)
32. If we do, there is a crown of righteousness waiting for us: (4:8)
  - a. That the Lord, the righteous judge shall give us.
  - b. On the day of his appearing.
  - c. To all those who love his appearing.
33. The Lord will never forsake us when we stand for the truth:
  - a. He will strengthen us so that his word might fully known. (4:16-17)
34. The Lord will deliver us from every evil work and preserve us to his heavenly kingdom. (4:18)

## **Titus**

**Written around A.D. 65**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: This is Paul's letter to Titus, the bishop of the churches in Crete. This letter is almost like a smaller version of 1 Timothy where Paul constantly reiterates the need of believers to live righteous lives with good works to combat the lazy, "I'm saved, so I can do what I want" false-convert mentality that Titus had to deal with in Crete.
- B. Authorship: Written by Paul the apostle. Some things to consider regarding Paul and this letter.
  1. Paul was called by Jesus Christ to unveil the riches of Christ to Gentiles that knew very little to nothing about the promises and covenants of God. God gave Paul such a clear understanding that salvation ultimately was only by the grace of God through faith. Because of this, many accused Paul of preaching a gospel that gave people a free pass to sin. However, nothing could be further from the truth. Paul always exhorted in his preaching and epistles for believers in Christ to show the fruits of genuine conversion through their "good works". Paul fought hard for both the truth that salvation is only by faith (not of our own works) AND that we are called



to live sober, righteous lives in all godliness with good works until the day the Lord appears to gather us together.

C. Audience: Titus. Some information regarding the man Titus:

1. Titus was a spiritual son to Paul. He was a Greek that became a believer in Jesus Christ. He accompanied Paul and Barnabas to Jerusalem for the famous "Jerusalem Council" in Acts 15 regarding salvation for the Gentiles. He was a living testimony that the Gentiles didn't need to be circumcised in order to be saved. He had believed the gospel, received the Spirit, never was circumcised, and never felt led to be circumcised. He joined Paul on some of his journeys. Paul sent him to the church of Corinth a couple of times to deliver letters, collect funds for the saints in Jerusalem, and bring reports back to Paul regarding the condition of the church. He probably accompanied Paul to Crete at some point where he and Paul preached the gospel and saw souls saved throughout the island. It appears that Paul then left Titus in Crete to establish these new churches and appoint bishops and deacons to establish sound doctrine and order in these new young churches.

D. Analysis:

1. **A letter to set in order the churches of God.** Paul wrote this letter to Titus to establish proper order in the new churches of Crete. He first exhorts him to ordain elders as overseers. He tells him what these men must be like and how they must be sound in the faith and instruction of the gospel. He exhorts Titus to charge the elder men and elder women to teach the younger men and women on how to live sober, godly lives that are befitting of the gospel of Jesus Christ. These elements are so vital for a church to both be sound in the faith, and to be fruitful for generations.
2. **A letter to exhort believers unto good works.** While our good works could never save us from our sins, the true gospel is a clear call into a new life of good works that will make a difference in others lives. Paul throughout this letter exhorts over and over the importance of believers to continue in good works as these works reflect the glory of God and can make an eternal difference in the lives of both believers and unbelievers.

## II. Overview Outline

- |   |             |
|---|-------------|
| A. Salutation & Introduction  | Ch 1:1-4    |
| B. Ordaining Elders   | Ch 1:5-9    |
| • Paul charges Titus to ordain the right elders to positions of leadership.   |             |
| C. Dealing with the Unruly  | Ch 1:10-16  |
| • Paul warns Titus about the men who will be challenges to the ministry.  |             |
| D. Sound Doctrine & Living  | Ch 2 - 3:11 |
| • Titus is to charge all believers to sound doctrine and godliness with good works because of the great grace of God until the day Jesus appears. |             |
| E. Conclusion   | Ch 3:12-15  |
| • Paul's final requests, admonitions, and blessing.   |             |

### III. Keys

#### A. Key Themes:

- Godliness, the gospel, good works, unruly heretics, sound doctrine, instruction, God's grace, Jesus our Saviour.

#### B. Key Words/Phrases:

- God, "our Saviour", good, "good work(s)", men, grace, sound, doctrine, hope.

#### C. Key Verses:

1. 1:2; our hope, and God cannot lie.
2. 1:15-16; the pure compared to the defiled and reprobate.
3. 2:11-14; the true grace of God and what it teaches.
4. 3:3-7; the kindness, love, and grace of our God.
5. 3:8; the importance of good works for believers.

### IV. Other Good Stuff: There are some important truths revealed throughout this letter regarding salvation and the true grace of God. Below is a list of some of those things:

1. It's called "the faith of God's elect". (1:1)
2. This comes through acknowledging the truth which is after (according to) godliness. (1:1)
3. The gospel brings the "hope of eternal life". (1:2)
4. God promised this hope before the world began. (1:2)
5. He has now manifested his word through preaching. (1:3)
6. Faith in the true gospel leads to good works. Those who claim to know God but live abominable lives actually deny him and are reprobate. (1:16)
7. The gospel teaches believers of all ages (male and female) how to live good godly lives that adorn the doctrine of God. (2:1-10)
8. The grace of God has appeared to "all men". (2:11)
9. The grace of God teaches believers to:
  - a. Deny ungodliness and worldly lusts. (2:12)
  - b. Live soberly, righteously, and godly in this world. (2:12)
  - c. Look for the blessed hope and glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour. (2:13)
10. Christ gave himself for us to: (2:14)
  - a. Redeem us from all iniquity.
  - b. Purify us to himself a peculiar people zealous of good works.
11. Our salvation is:
  - a. The kindness and love of God toward man. (3:4)
  - b. Not by our works of righteousness. (3:5)
  - c. According to God's mercy. (3:5)
  - d. By the washing of regeneration. (3:5)
  - e. By the renewing of the Holy Ghost. (3:5)
12. God's love and kindness is shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour. (3:4,6)

13. We are justified by his grace. (3:7)
14. We are being made heirs according to the hope of eternal life. (3:7)
15. Those who believe must be careful to maintain good works (these things are good and profitable unto men). (3:8)

## **Philemon**

**Written around A.D. 62**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: This is Paul's letter to Philemon (possibly the bishop of a small house church in Colosse). This is a beautiful little letter about forgiveness, reconciliation and restoration following true repentance between brothers in the Lord (Philemon and Onesimus). This is all made possible because of the godly example of Paul, and because of Jesus Christ himself.
- B. Authorship: Written by Paul the apostle. Some things to consider regarding Paul and this letter.
  1. Paul was wholly dedicated to the ministry and the people that he won to the Lord. His heart was to see God's people grow in grace, holiness, maturity and love. He knew that the body of Christ must be pure and spotless, but believers also have to be merciful and forgiving like Jesus. He desired to see believers working together and serving one another by love. As a result, everywhere he went, he worked hard to these ends.
- C. Audience: Philemon. Some information regarding the man Philemon:
  1. Philemon was probably a leader (possibly a bishop) of a small house church in Colosse (this is based on Onesimus, Epaphras, and Archippus being mentioned in Colossians 4). He was probably a wealthy believer as Onesimus was his own personal servant. He was clearly a worker in the gospel as Paul calls him his "fellowlabourer". It is quite possible that Apphia was his wife and Archippus was their son. It also appears (based on verse 19) that Paul was the one that led Philemon to faith in Christ. Some people speculate this may have happened in Ephesus. Other than these things, there is not much else known about Philemon.
- D. Analysis:
  1. **A letter of reconciliation.** Paul wrote this letter to Philemon to both make communication with him and to beseech him to receive his former servant, Onesimus, back. It appears that Onesimus was Philemon's servant (and possibly his brother or relative based on verse 16), and that there had been a major breach in their relationship (some people speculate that Onesimus had run away from

Philemon). Evidently though, somehow Onesimus crossed paths with Paul in prison in Rome. Whether or not Onesimus was at one point a prisoner himself, we are not sure. However, what we do know is that Paul led Onesimus to faith in Christ, and Onesimus became a changed man. As much as Paul loved Onesimus and would have loved for Onesimus to remain in Rome to continue to help minister to him in prison, he deemed it more needful for Onesimus to return home back to Philemon to try to reconcile with him and make things right. Paul wrote this letter as a true ambassador of Jesus Christ, standing as a mediator between brothers to bring them back into relationship with one another. His desire was that through his example and relationship with Philemon, and through Onesimus' changed life, that Philemon would willingly forgive and receive Onesimus back with open heart and arms. Paul's desire is that through this grace, their relationship could be better than ever due to them now being brothers in Christ. This truly is a beautiful little letter and shows the importance and preeminence of brotherly relationships even above the work of the ministry. God desires his people to dwell together in love and unity. And we are to seek peace with one another and forgive one another as Jesus Christ has forgiven us and made peace with us.

2. **A letter of faith.** Paul sent Onesimus to deliver this letter to Philemon in full faith that Philemon would both receive the letter and Onesimus. Paul trusted that Philemon would go above and beyond what Paul even wrote in the letter. Paul also requested Philemon to prepare lodging for Paul in faith that Paul would be released from prison and be able to come and visit Philemon and the other saints in Colosse. Paul truly lived by faith, and by acting in faith, we see how God opened amazing doors for him and those around him for his will to be done in and through them.

## II. Overview Outline

- A. Salutation vs 1-3
- B. Introduction vs 4-9
  - Paul gives thanks, informs of his prayers and joy regarding the brethren, and gets ready to make his request known. .
- C. Request for Reconciliation vs 10-21
  - Paul beseeches Philemon to receive Onesimus back as both a servant and brother in Christ and offers to pay any debts on his account.
- D. Request for Lodging & Farewells vs 22-25.

## III. Keys

- A. Key Themes:
  - Love, joy, reconciliation, reception, brotherhood, grace, trust/faith.
- B. Key Words/Phrases:
  - Christ, Jesus, Lord, brother, "fellow...", love, beloved, receive, beseech, faith, joy.
- C. Key Verses:
  1. 1:5-6; true love and faith, and how to communicate them.

2. 1:15-17; the hope of the gospel (for all of us as well).

IV. Other Good Stuff: There are some really beautiful types and truths revealed in this letter that will apply to us and our relationship to Jesus Christ, the Father, and our brothers in Christ:

A. Types:

1. Paul really operates as a type of Jesus Christ as he stands between Philemon and Onesimus to bring them back into relationship with one another.
2. Philemon stands almost as a type of the Father (being the father of the house). He is the one who was wronged by and lost his servant. Paul now implores him to receive the servant back as one even above a servant. (Obviously, this type breaks down at many points; perhaps a better type would be Philemon as a type of the Jew, and Onesimus being a type of the Gentile)
3. Onesimus stands as a type of a sinner who has repented and received forgiveness of sins from Christ, and now is being prepared to be brought back into relationship with the Father and to dwell in his house for evermore.
4. The other brethren and sisters represent those who have already been reconciled to God that are awaiting to receive their newly found brother in Christ.

B. Nuggets of Truth:

1. Love and faith are towards the Lord Jesus AND all the saints. (5)
2. Our communication of our faith becomes more effectual (we get better and better at sharing & showing our faith) through acknowledging all the good things that Jesus has done in us. (6)
3. Even when we are in a position to command someone to do something, it is better to beseech them by love to do it of their own free will. (8-9,14)
4. When we are truly born again our lives can be profitable to the ministry and to other believers lives. (10-11,13)
5. Sometimes we must lose relationships temporarily, but through Christ, we can be received by him and be part of his body for ever. (15-16)
6. We will be received by the Father as Jesus himself who has paid our full debts and is our surety. (17-19)
7. Let us be like Philemon and be obedient and do even more than the Lord commands us to do in his written word. (19-21)
8. The power of prayers of faith by the brethren for the brethren. (22)

## **Hebrews**

**Written around A.D. ??**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: Hebrews is one of the richest books of the New Testament. It is written to show the Hebrew people how much greater Jesus is (the Messiah) than the angels, prophets, priests, and sacrifices of the Old Testament. The 2 main things that Paul looks at regarding Christ is that he is the Son of God (God & man), and the High priest after the order of Melchizedec (both were promised in the Psalms). He also shows the superiority of the New Covenant to the Old Covenant (in all ways). He shows that Christ's work and sacrifice are complete, and teaches that the Hebrew people must follow Christ by faith until the end no matter what the cost.
- B. Authorship: Written by Paul. Some things to consider regarding Paul and this letter.
  - 1. Paul declared himself to be "of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews, as touching the law, a Pharisee." He was a Hebrew Jew and zealous to serve the true God according to the Old Testament law. He studied to be a master of the Old Testament under one of the most well-respected Pharisees of his time (Gamaliel). He probably knew the Old Testament as well as any Jew of his days, but before he met Christ, he only knew the law according to what it clearly said ("the letter of the law"). However, once Christ called him and taught him, Paul then had the Holy Ghost to open up to him all the deep things of the word. And so with the sharp mind he had, and with all the scripture he had already stored in his mind, now the Holy Ghost was able to really open up the things of Jesus Christ and the New Covenant to him all throughout the Old Testament Scriptures. God showed him the abundant riches of Christ that were foreshadowed, pictured, and prophesied of all throughout the Old Testament. Paul truly became a "scribe instructed unto the kingdom of heaven." He was a "steward of the mysteries of God." And he was called of God to reveal the hidden mysteries of Christ from the Old Testament scriptures to the body of Christ.
  - 2. Paul understood that ultimately the New (and better) Testament was all about JESUS CHRIST. Paul lost everything in his past (friends, family, religion, career, honour of men, etc...) in order to grow closer and closer to Jesus Christ. Paul loved Christ with all his heart and wanted to be true to him until the end. Paul also desired that everyone else would come to this same love and faithfulness to Jesus. But above all people of the earth, Paul loved his own people (the Hebrews) the most. He said that if it were possible that he would become accursed from Christ in order for his Hebrew brethren to come to know Christ. Paul loved the Hebrews.
- C. Audience: The Hebrew People. Some information regarding the Hebrews:
  - 1. The Jewish people were also known as the "Hebrews" (the name "Hebrew" comes from "Heber" or "Eber"; he was the grandson of Shem and the great-great-grandfather of Abraham, see Genesis 10:21-25 & 11:10-27). They were the flesh-and-blood descendants of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. They were the only people of the earth that God revealed himself to as a whole people group. They were the physical children of the covenants that God made with Abraham and later on with them as a nation through Moses.

2. God raised up prophets from this nation throughout their history to speak to them and guide them into his ways. He also used angels to deliver messages and protection. God gave them a law (known as the “first” covenant) and laid out the laws, statutes, judgments, and ordinances for their personal lives, family lives, morals, civil life, and religion. They were given a priesthood, sacrifices, and a house of worship and prayer (originally “the tabernacle”, then later “the temple”). God worked so specifically (and many times miraculously) with them for over 1,500 years until Jesus Christ came. The Hebrew people were beloved by God, and God sent his Son Jesus to be the Messiah, Apostle, Prophet, and High Priest for the Hebrews, and ultimately, the whole world.
3. While the Hebrews had many advantages over the other nations of the world, they often hardened their hearts to the Lord and chased after the sins and false gods of the heathen. Therefore, when they obeyed God, they experienced blessings and grace above all other nations; but when they disobeyed the Lord, they experienced judgment and chastening more severely than other nations. “For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required.” God gave much to the Hebrew people, and therefore, held them to a higher standard than all other people.

D. Analysis:

1. **A letter to reveal the superiority of Jesus Christ above everything in the Old Testament.** Paul wrote to show the Hebrews that Jesus, his position, his word, his work, his sacrifice, his priesthood, his blood, and his covenant are ALL superior to all those things in the Old Covenant. God used his servants the prophets and angels to deliver messages to his people in the Old Testament. He used Moses his servant to deliver the law and lead Israel out of Egypt. He used Joshua (his name is translated “Jesus” in the New Testament) to lead Israel into the promised land. He called Aaron and made him and his sons the high priests over the Old Covenant. They had priestly garments, a tabernacle, an altar, divine services, animal sacrifices, and prayers. There were men and women who lived by faith and set marvelous examples of how to be true to God. But Jesus, is even BETTER than all these things and people. Jesus wasn’t just a servant, he was the Son of the living God. He is the Lord himself that laid the foundations of the earth. He is the Apostle and High Priest of the New and better covenant (better than the apostles and high priests of the Old Covenant). He will lead us out of sin and into eternal rest. He was called by the Father to offer up himself for us so that we might be perfected through him and his sacrifice once and for all. He is a merciful and faithful high priest who stands between us and the Father interceding for us and giving us grace to help in time of need. His body and his blood have finally made the way for our hearts to become pure and true so that we might draw near to God into his most holy place of heaven itself. He is the perfect example and the author and finisher of our faith who we must look to to finish this race of faith set before us. Paul reveals how much better Jesus is than all that came before him.
2. **A book to confirm a promise and an oath made by God back in Psalms.** Back in the book of Psalms, God made a promise that he would have an only BEGOTTEN SON that he would anoint and give him absolute dominion over the

entire earth (Psalm 2). This Son would be the King of all kings. Paul confirms this promise here in the book of Hebrews by revealing clearly that Jesus is this Son that would be begotten of God. Also, back in Psalms, God made an oath that David's Lord ("Christ") would be a priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek (Psalm 110). And this Lord would sit at the LORD's right hand until all his enemies would be made his footstool (put under his feet). This oath was so powerful that Paul writes about this oath and opens up many truths and implications that come out of it for almost half of the entire book of Hebrews! Paul confirms to the Hebrew people that Jesus is that priest after a new order: the order of Melchizedek (the priest that blessed Abram back in Genesis 14). He is not after the Levitical priestly tribe of Aaron, but rather, this is a new priesthood. And therefore, because the priesthood was changed, there also had to be a change of the law and covenant. And because it is a new priesthood, there had to be a different sacrifice and offerings and house of God. All these things had to change because of the promise and the oath that God made all the way back in Psalms. And Paul writes Hebrews to confirm and unveil these things.

3. **An exhortation unto faith, faithfulness, holiness, and perfection.** Paul does not play around with this gospel. Paul makes it very clear that rejection of Christ, his gospel, and this new and better covenant will result in far greater punishment and damnation than disobedience to the law. Paul warns against just starting to walk with Christ, and then turning back and walking away from him. He warns against having your heart hardened through the deceitfulness of sin. He warns against having an evil heart of unbelief. He exhorts the Hebrew believers to continue in the faith of Jesus Christ until the end of their lives no matter what the cost. He admonishes them to continue to gather together and exhort each other daily to continue in Christ and holiness. He exhorts them to continue on to perfection and not continue playing around as babies. He exhorts them to lay aside every weight and the sin that besets us and to run this race until the end with patience. He exhorts them to keep pressing forward after being chastened and not allow any root of bitterness to corrupt them. He exhorts them to follow after peace with all men and holiness or else there is no hope of seeing the Lord. He exhorts them to be true to Christ no matter what the cost, and to leave the camp of Old Testament Israel (the Jews according to the law) and to follow Jesus Christ and bear his reproach. This is a call to being true to Christ.

## II. Overview Outline

- A. Jesus: The Son & Lord Ch 1-2
  - Jesus is superior to the prophets and angels; yet he was made lower than the angels as a man to die for us.
- B. Jesus: The Apostle & High Priest Ch 3-7
  - Jesus is superior to Moses & Joshua (the apostles of the old covenant); we are called to enter his rest; he is superior to Aaron (the Levitical priesthood); we are called to press forward into perfection; Jesus is the high priest after the order of Melchisedec, made with an oath.



- C. Jesus and The New & Better Covenant Ch 8-10:
  - The new covenant is far better than the old covenant; Jesus came to take away the first and establish the second; he did this by his blood and body.
- D. Following Jesus all the way Ch 11-13
  - The need of faith and the example of OT saints; the call to approach Christ & heavenly Jerusalem; continuing in peace, love, & holiness.

### III. Keys

- A. Key Themes:
  - God, Jesus, the Son, the right hand of God, better than, salvation, the law, the word of God, faith, unbelief, promises, oath, reconciliation, atonement, perfection, priesthood (& high priests), the blood, Christ's sacrifice, heart, holding fast, hope, old covenant/testament, new covenant, fear & fear of God, holiness, warnings/exhortations,
- B. Key Words/Phrases:
  - God, faith(ful), priest(s)(hood), us, offer(ed)(ing)(s), sin(s), blood, more, high, Lord, heaven(s)(ly), Jesus, promise(s)(ed), Son/son, first, therefore, covenant, "let us", better, perfect, wherefore, "the word", fear(ful)(ed), holy, see, oath, mediator.
- C. Key Verses:
  1. 1:1-2; God's communication through the times.
  2. 2:1-3; how shall we escape?
  3. 2:9; Jesus tastes death for every man.
  4. 3:12-14; importance of exhorting daily.
  5. 4:14-16; Jesus, our High Priest to give us help in time of need.
  6. 5:5-10; Jesus called of God as High Priest.
  7. 7:25-26; Jesus able to save to the uttermost; holy, harmless...
  8. 9:14-15; Christ's blood offered up; mediator of new testament.
  9. 10:10-14; sanctified and perfected once for all through Christ's body.
  10. 10:19-22; entering into the holiest by the blood of Jesus.
  11. 11:1; what faith is.
  12. 11:6; without faith it is impossible to please him.
  13. 12:1-2; run the race looking to Jesus.
  14. 12:25-29; refuse not the voice of him that speaketh.
  15. 13:5-6; he will never leave us nor forsake us; he is our helper.

IV. Other Good Stuff: Fascinating Studies. There are many important and wonderful truths about Jesus Christ, his identity, his roles and work, the New Covenant, Salvation, Faith, and warnings and admonitions to professing believers. I will attach a supplemental document listing many of these things. However, below I have listed some very key important things that are worth studying out both in Hebrews and throughout the scriptures:

1. The differences between the word of God in the Old Testament (the law, etc) and the word of God in the New Testament. (Ch 1,2,12)

2. The superiority of Jesus to the angels as the Son of God and Lord. (1)
3. The humility of Jesus Christ as the Son of man in becoming man and for what reasons he did this. (2)
4. Jesus Christ as the first Apostle of the New Testament (and his superiority in comparison with the apostles of the OT like Moses & Joshua). (3,4)
5. Jesus Christ as the High Priest of the New Testament after the order of Melchisedec (and the superiority of his priesthood to Aaron and the Levitical priesthood of the Law). (2, 4-8)
6. The story of Israel in the wilderness and failing to enter the promised land and the implications for the Jews of the first century and for all who think they have faith in God throughout the ages. (3-4)
7. The “rest” that Paul speaks of in chapter 4. (4)
8. Understanding the milk, the meat, and the strong meat of the word. (5)
9. The principles of the doctrine of Christ: repentance from dead works, faith toward God, the doctrine of baptisms, the laying on of hands, the resurrection of the dead, and eternal judgment. (6)
10. Discerning true believers versus those who appear to believe for a season but ultimately fall away. (3,6,10)
11. The promise and the oath (the 2 immutable things) from Psalms that the Father made to the Son by which the New Covenant is eternally established upon. (Psalm 2:7 & 110:4) (1,5,6)
12. The differences and superiority of the New Covenant to the Old Covenant. (7-10)
13. A thorough study of the tabernacle and it’s articles and construction and how all of these things pointed forward to Christ, his salvation, & the New Covenant. (9)
14. A comparison of the sacrifices and offerings of the Old and the New Covenant. (9-10)
15. The redemption, atonement, sacrifice, and reconciliation of Jesus Christ! (9-10)
16. The true call of faith we are called to. (10-12)
17. Understanding what faith actually is and how it is manifested. (10-12)
18. The OT examples of faith and what we can learn from them. (11)
19. Jesus, the author & finisher of our faith! (12)
20. The chastening of the Lord. (12)
21. The differences of the Mounts & Calls of the Old Covenant & the New Covenant! (12)
22. The fear of God and our God as a consuming fire! (2,10,12,13)
23. The altar & offerings of the Law compared with those of Grace. (13)

\* To truly soundly understand the book of Hebrews and study out all of these topics will require a solid understanding of the entire OT, the gospels, Acts, & the other epistles. However, some specific books that are very key and connected to many themes in Hebrews are the following: The 5 books of the Law, Psalms, Matthew, John, Romans, Galatians, Revelation.

## **The General Epistles (& Revelation)**

The final portion of the New Testament is a group of eight letters written by other chief apostles (and one prophet) in the early church. They are as follows:

- I. 1 letter by James (the Lord's half-brother who basically replaced James the brother of John as one of the key leaders and apostles in the church in Jerusalem).
- II. 2 letters by Peter (the leading apostle of the original 12 that Jesus chose to carry the gospel forward after he went back to heaven).
- III. 3 letters by John (the apostle closest to the heart of Jesus who Jesus chose to outlive all the other apostles to help shepherd the churches until the end of the 1st century).
- IV. 1 letter by Jude (also the Lord's half brother who was a powerful prophetic voice in the early church and a strong defender of the true faith of Jesus Christ).
- V. 1 Prophetic Book of the Revelation of Jesus Christ and the end-times written by John the apostle to 7 specific churches and the body of Christ at large to lay out the prophetic events that will occur before the return and kingdom of our Lord Jesus.

These letters are excellent letters in instruction and exhortation to New Testament believers to live a godly life in Christ Jesus according to the will, word, and Spirit of Christ. These letters all direct us into true fellowship with the church, the Father, and the Son. They are very practical in many instances on how to truly walk and live as a Christian. And they are wonderful books to learn and grow in the Christian virtues of faith, grace, knowledge, temperance, righteousness, love, mercy, humility, service, brotherly kindness, charity, and others as well.

In all of the epistles of the New Testament, the flavors of the authors come through rather strongly. Each one has his own style and personality with which the Lord works and directs into his perfect wisdom. While Paul can be very technical and long-winded in thorough detailed explanations of every little aspect of what he is trying to unveil, all of these men seem to be quite a bit more direct. James is strong and straightforward. Peter focuses on enduring sufferings and warns of dangers. John is very simple and yet deeply profound in identity and relationship. And Jude is a bold, out-spoken fighter. While God clearly gave the majority workload to Paul for the writing of the New Testament epistles (for many different reasons), I believe it is very important to read, study, and meditate deeply on all of these general epistles as well to gain a more full, well-balanced, and practical walk in Jesus Christ. In the end, if you read all the epistles as a humble child of God that is eager to do the will of our Father in heaven, you will see that all of these men (that God hand chose to write these letters) are preaching the same doctrine that is according to godliness. All of them will help lead you into lives of righteousness and true holiness so that we may be presented perfect in Christ Jesus at the day of his appearing.

"But the God of all grace, who hath called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you." - Peter (1 Peter 5:10)

"And now, little children, abide in him; that, when he shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his coming. If ye know that he is righteous, ye know that every one that doeth righteousness is born of him." - John (1 John 2:28-29)

## **James**

**Written around A.D. ??**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: James wrote this letter to the believers of the 12 tribes of Israel that were scattered due to persecution to show that true faith in Christ and his word results in good works involving the widows, the fatherless, the poor, the use of our tongues, and treatment of the brethren. This letter is a call to a real Christian life out of real faith.
- B. Authorship: Written by James, the Lord's half-brother (who became an apostle). Some things to consider regarding James and this letter.
  - 1. James grew up as the son of Joseph and Mary in the same household with Jesus. It appears that James was next after Jesus in birth order (thus being Mary's 2nd born son but Joseph and Mary's firstborn, natural child together). We don't know much about James, but what we do know is that he didn't really believe his older (half) brother Jesus was the Messiah during the first couple of years of Jesus' ministry (at least). The words of Christ didn't seem to be able to convince him (all alone). However, we know that ultimately, James was a believer AFTER Jesus resurrected (as 1 Corinthians 15:7 shows that Jesus revealed himself specifically to James). The scriptures do not tell us exactly when or how he became a believer; but evidently, at some point, the Spirit of God brought him to faith in his half-brother as the Messiah.
  - 2. James became an apostle and ultimately, became one of the chief leaders of the church of Jerusalem. While he was never considered one of the 12, he basically replaced James (John's brother) after his death as one of the top 3 leaders of the church of Jerusalem (alongside Peter & John). He was definitely a leader of men. He was a man of truth and called men to action. He had sound judgment and did not waste words.
- C. Audience: The 12 tribes of Israel that claimed faith in Jesus as their Messiah that were scattered after the persecution in Judaea. Some information regarding these people:
  - 1. On the day of Pentecost, after Jesus ascended back to heaven, many Jews from all around the world came to Jerusalem for the feast of Pentecost as they were commanded to according to the law of Moses. It was on this day that the Lord poured out the Holy Ghost on the first church of 120 disciples in the upper room. After they all were filled with the Holy Ghost, they began preaching the gospel and testifying of the wonderful works of the Lord to all the Jews that were gathered in Jerusalem. After Peter preached to the multitude, 3,000 Jews repented and came to believe in Jesus as their Messiah (the Christ). Many of these Jews stayed in Jerusalem and Judea for some time, but eventually, most of them all returned to their homes around the world with this new faith in Jesus as the Messiah.
  - 2. The leaders of Judaism (the chief priests, the Sadducees, and the Pharisees) were against this gospel and opposed the apostles and the early church. They did everything they could to get them to stop preaching about Jesus as the Messiah of Israel (and Saviour of the world). After they finally got filled enough with the devil to stone Stephen (a great man of faith in Christ and preacher of the gospel), they

began seriously persecuting the early church in Jerusalem. At this point, just about all of the believers (except the apostles) were scattered throughout Judea and Samaria trying to avoid this persecution. As time went on, the Jewish believers and many who claimed the name of Jesus as their Messiah scattered throughout more and more of the world (due to persecution, or just moving to new locations, etc).

3. Historically, Jews are generally known to be excellent at maintaining their identity and staying close knit together in Jewish communities (no matter where they go). Due to their customs, laws, and traditions, they remain separate and distinct from other cultures. Because of this, they have been able to both pass on this heritage to their children, and maintain very strongly united communities anywhere on the earth. Jews also, generally speaking, are quite successful in their business affairs and excellent at training up their children in the same manner. Thus, they tend to be good at making plans, making profit, protecting finances, and multiplying their profits more through wise investments. And because they are usually good at training their children up into the family business, their estates and networks tend to grow bigger and stronger as time goes on (usually until whatever nation they are living in turns on them and plunders their goods and/or persecutes them and they are forced either into poverty, flight, or death).

D. Analysis:

1. **A letter to adjust the believers perspective in order to endure hardships & trials.** James wrote to these Jews scattered throughout the world to remind them that trials & temptations are what God uses to purify his people to become perfect (everything we are supposed to be). He reminded them that the rich will lose all their things, but the poor that seek God will be exalted by the Lord. He reminded them that the rich are usually the enemies of Christ while the poor are usually chosen by God and rich in faith. He reminded them that the Lord is very patient and waits long for the fruits of the earth. And he reminded them of the prophets who suffered much affliction, and of Job particularly, but that the end of their patience was the Lord's great pity and kindness.
2. **A letter to call people who claim to have faith to prove it.** Anybody can claim to believe in God. The devils themselves believe in God (know that he exists) and they tremble in his presence, but they do not have true faith. James calls these Jews (who claim to believe in Jesus) to step up and prove it. He calls them out on their double-mindedness (and lack of faith) and explains that you can only receive what you request in prayer if you ask in faith. He makes it clear that those who only "hear" the word but don't do it, are deceiving themselves and aren't truly receiving the word. Only those who continue in the word and are doers of the work are those who are blessed by God in what they do. He makes it clear that "faith" without works is "dead". You cannot have living faith and not have any good works come out of it. Those who claim the name of Christ must not respect the rich but despise the poor; this is evil, and Christ was nothing like this. James calls these "believers" to prove their "good religion" by caring for the fatherless and the widows, and keeping themselves unspotted from the world. He reveals that you can't be friends with the world and friends with God. The world is the enemy of God. He reveals

that true faith can save the sick and the prayer of faithful righteous men can make many powerful things happen on this earth.

3. **A call to genuine repentance and the fruits thereof.** James does not play around with those to whom is writing. He calls them to true repentance and the true fruits to show it. He calls them to stop blaming God when they are tempted, but to endure the temptation and be blessed. He calls them to be swift to hear, slow to speak, and slow to wrath. He calls them to lay apart all filthiness and receive the word of God with meekness. He calls them to stop just “hearing” the word and start doing it. He calls them to learn to tame their tongues and receive and speak according to the wisdom from above, and not the bitter, envying, selfish, striving “wisdom” that is of the devil and hell. He calls them adulterers and adulteresses because they have yoked up with the world and learned the ways of the world and forsaken the way of the Lord. He calls them to humble themselves, to submit to God, to resist the devil, to draw near to God, to cleanse their hands, to purify their hearts, to be afflicted and mourn and weep, to sorrow and repent before the Lord so that he might lift them up. He calls them to stop speaking evil one of another and judging one another, but to rather leave things to the true Judge to deal with. He calls them to stop boasting of all their plans to make wealth, and stay humble and realize we can only do things if the Lord wills them. He calls them to confess their faults one to another and to pray one for another for God’s forgiveness and healing.

## II. Overview Outline

- |   |      |
|---|------|
| A. Temptations & the word   | Ch 1 |
| • We are to find joy in temptations, endure temptation, receive the word in humility, and continue in the word and do the work to be blessed. |      |
| B. Treatment of brethren & works  | Ch 2 |
| • We are to have no respect of persons based on status or class; saying we have faith means nothing unless our works show our faith.          |      |
| C. The tongue & wisdom  | Ch 3 |
| • The tongue is a little member but causes great problems; we must receive the wisdom from above and not use our tongues for evil.            |      |
| D. True repentance & the world  | Ch 4 |
| • All our fights come from within, and the world is the enemy of God; we must repent completely and remain humble before the Lord.            |      |
| E. Treasure, patience, & prayer   | Ch 5 |
| • All riches will be lost in the day of judgment, so let us be patient and endure sufferings and pray with and for one another in the church. |      |

## III. Keys

- A. Key Themes:
- The Lord, Temptations/trials, faith, patience, wisdom, rich and poor, good works, humility, treatment of one another (in word, judgment, & deed).

B. Key Words/Phrases:

- man, God, “the Lord”, brethren, faith, works, law, evil, judge(s)(st)(th), pray(er)(ed), patience/patient, perfect, rich(es), lust(s)(eth), heart(s).

C. Key Verses:

1. 1:12; the blessing for enduring temptation.
2. 1:17; every good & perfect gift from the Father.
3. 1:22; doers, not hearers only.
4. 2:17-20; faith without works.
5. 3:17; the wisdom from above.
6. 4:6-10; humbling ourselves under God & true repentance.
7. 5:16; confessing of faults and fervent prayer.
8. 5:19-20; the importance of converting a sinner.

IV. Other Good Stuff: James gives some serious charges to his Jewish brethren that claim the name of Jesus. With these charges is usually a reason or purpose behind the charge. Below is a list of these charges he gives:

1. Count it all joy when you fall into divers (various/different) temptations (trials/tests). (1:2)
  - \* Knowing that these trials work patience which leads to perfection.
2. Let no man say he is tempted of God. (1:13)
  - \* For God does not tempt any man with evil.
3. Be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath. (1:18)
  - \* For the wrath of man does not work the righteousness of God.
4. Be doers of the word and not hearers only. (1:22)
  - \* Because then you just deceive yourself.
5. Don't claim the faith of our Lord Jesus with respect of persons. (2:1)
  - \* Because then you become judges of evil thoughts.
6. Be not many masters. (3:1)
  - \* Knowing that they will receive the greater condemnation.
7. Don't bless God and curse man with the same mouth. (3:9-10)
  - \* For those men are made in the similitude of God.
8. Submit yourselves to God. (4:7)
  - \* Because he gives grace to the humble but resists the proud.
9. Resist the devil. (4:7)
  - \* And he will flee from you.
10. Draw nigh (near) to God. (4:8)
  - \* And he will draw nigh to you.
11. Cleanse your hands (ye sinners). (4:8)
12. Purify your hearts (ye double-minded). (4:8)
13. Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep (let your laughter be turned to mourning and your joy to heaviness). (4:9)
14. Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord. (4:10)
  - \* And he shall lift you up.

15. Speak not evil one of another. (4:11)
  - \* If you do, you speak evil of the law and judge the law.
16. Don't boast in the unknown future. (4:13-14)
  - \* For you don't know what will happen even tomorrow.
17. Be patient unto the coming of the Lord; stablish your hearts. (5:7-8)
  - \* For the coming of the Lord draweth nigh.
18. Grudge not against one another. (5:9)
  - \* Or you will be condemned, for the Judge stands at the door.
19. Swear not (neither by heaven, earth, or any other oath). (5:12)
  - \* Lest you fall into condemnation.
20. Let your yea be your yea, and your nay, your nay. (5:12)
21. Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another. (5:16)
  - \* That you may be healed.

## **1 Peter**

**Written around A.D. 60**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: Peter wrote this letter to scattered believers throughout 5 provinces of Asia Minor to confirm their faith in the midst of trials and suffering. He reveals that the new birth leads to holiness, charity and patience. He reveals the call of the people of God unto a heavenly citizenship and people, and thereby, emphasizes submission to earthly authority and following Christ even to the point of suffering wrongfully as a testimony of this grace that has transformed us.
- B. Authorship: Written by Peter the apostle. Some things to consider regarding Peter and this letter.
  1. Peter was the third one of the disciples to begin following the Lord. He was naturally rash and impetuous. He spoke what was on his mind without hesitation. This led to him giving some great confessions along with some seriously foolish statements. But ultimately, Peter came to the faith that Jesus was the Christ, the Son of God himself, and he confessed this publicly on behalf of the whole group. Jesus blessed him for receiving this revelation from the Father in heaven. Peter knew that the Christ would be the King of the entire earth. He knew that he would conquer all of his enemies. But what he had to learn in time, was that the first time Christ came to earth was not to conquer the world, but rather, to suffer and die to save man from his sins so that man might be redeemed to God and made worthy to enter his eternal kingdom. He also (like most Jews of his day), thought the Christ/Messiah was only for Israel. However, he also had to learn over time, that Jesus



(the Messiah) was come to call people from all nations and tribes into one new holy nation. He even ended up being the first man to preach the gospel to the Gentiles (non-Jews) and see them believe in Christ and receive the Holy Ghost just like he and the other Jewish believers had.

2. It appears that Peter left his fishing trade (although he revisited it at times) to follow Jesus. When Jesus called Andrew and Peter, he called them to follow him and promised that he would make them “fishers of men.” Truly, this was the case for Peter. He became one of the twelve that were ordained as apostles to preach both the gospel of the kingdom (during Christ’s ministry) and the gospel of Christ (after Christ’s ascension to heaven) with authority and power. Peter was bold and daring, and once he received the filling of the Holy Ghost, he was a man on fire for the Lord. He preached fearlessly and brought many souls to repentance and faith in Jesus Christ. He truly was used of God to “fish” many souls out of the sea of destruction (the world). He understood the importance of the gospel and being a true “Christian” walking in the example of Christ in order to lead men to true repentance and faith in the Lord Jesus.
  3. Of the twelve, Peter became the outspoken leader of the group. He was the one that led the charge of the early church after Jesus went back to heaven. As we stated before, Peter was naturally bold, daring, rash and impetuous. So he made an excellent leader of the pack into new territory (which is why the Lord used him to be the first one to preach to the Gentiles). However, one important thing that Peter had to learn, was how to be a good shepherd of the Lord’s flock. Jesus himself (before he went back to heaven) charged Peter with the important task of feeding his sheep. Peter became one of the chief apostles overseeing the massive church in Jerusalem and learned how to be a good shepherd and watch over the flock of the Lord and protect it and provide for it.
  4. Peter vowed that he would die alongside the Lord and that he would never deny him. He tried to defend the Lord with the sword the night that the soldiers came to arrest Jesus. But then early that morning (under pressure), Peter, three separate times, denied being one of Jesus’ disciples. When Peter was reminded of his zealous vow and how Jesus had prophesied that he would deny him, he went out and wept bitterly. This experience really shook Peter. Peter truly loved the Lord, but at that point, he was still spiritually weak and had too much self-confidence. However, the Lord loved Peter, and for this purpose personally met with him after his resurrection and restored Peter’s hope and courage. Once Peter and the early church received the baptism of the Holy Ghost on Pentecost, Peter would never be ashamed of or deny his Lord again. No matter what the threats, whether a free man or imprisoned, whether before commoners or judges, Peter stood strong for the name and gospel of Jesus Christ as the only way of salvation. Ultimately, Peter had the opportunity to show his great love for our Lord by dying for him.
- C. Audience: The “strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia”. Some information regarding these people:
1. It appears that the “strangers” that Peter was writing to were believers who were living in those 5 specific Roman provinces in Asia Minor. The term “stranger” in the

Bible refers to a foreigner. Whether or not these believers were literal foreigners living in those regions, or whether Peter was referring to them as foreigners (“strangers”) in the spiritual sense (in that all believers are living as foreigners here in earth), I am not sure. But either way, we certainly know the latter to be true and that Peter is certainly exhorting them along these lines throughout this letter.

2. It appears that most of the believers that Peter is writing to were former Gentiles (not Jews) based upon 2:9-10. Before Christ, the Gentiles were not God’s people and had no direct access to the promises and covenants of God. However, through Jesus Christ, his great salvation, and faith in his glorious gospel, the Gentiles now can be part of the chosen generation, the royal priesthood, and the holy nation of God! Further proof that Peter is probably writing to Gentiles predominately is found in 2 Peter 3:15-16. In this passage we see that Peter was writing to people that Paul also wrote to, and we know that most of Paul’s ministry was towards the Gentile converts.

D. Analysis:

1. **A letter to lift the believers perspective in order to endure sufferings with grace and patience.** Peter understood suffering for the truth and righteousness of Jesus Christ. He personally watched the sinless, Lamb of God, (who never did wrong to anyone) stand fast for the truth even unto death. He watched him not try to defend himself, or argue or fight for his own life, but rather, commit himself to the Father and lay down his life to bear man’s sins in his own body on the cross for our redemption. And he saw how the Spirit of the living God brought him back to life and raise him up to the right hand of God with all authorities and powers being made subject under him. Peter was also personally arrested multiple times for preaching salvation through Jesus Christ alone. He was beaten, he was imprisoned, and he was on death row for this gospel. Peter never did any harm or wrong to these chief priests, Sadducees, or Pharisees who persecuted him, and yet, they hated him to the point of death. However, Peter never took it personally (after Christ’s ascension) and kept his eyes on Jesus as his Lord and Shepherd to be his great example; and he kept his eyes heavenward where his eternal inheritance, hope, and citizenship was. Peter exhorts these believers to shine as examples of the marvelous light of Christ’s grace in the midst of their sufferings for righteousness’ sake so that the lost might see their example and come to faith in the Lord in due time. Peter reveals the truth that trials refine our faith like fire refines gold and that suffering in the flesh is what brings us to stop sinning. He reveals to them that suffering brings us to no longer live after the lusts of men, but to live for the will of God. He also reveals that when we face persecution or reproach for the name of Christ, that there is a special spirit of glory and of God that rests upon us and brings us great happiness in the midst of the opposition. Peter had experienced these things firsthand, and exhorts the believers to lift their hearts and minds to these truths in order to suffer for Jesus Christ. He exhorts them to submit to all earthly authority and show honour to all men with a good attitude for the Lord’s sake.

2. **A letter to call believers to holiness and proper growth in the Lord by his word.** Peter reveals the truth that God is holy and that he has called his people to be holy as he is. He reveals that we are called to be set apart completely to God for his praise and glory; that we are to be pure; and that we are to follow in the footsteps of our Lord who was without sin and guile. Our gospel is a call to holiness before God. He also reveals the importance of the word of God: we are born again by God's incorruptible word; we grow properly through drinking in the sincere milk of his word; and we learn to endure sufferings and love one another through obedience to his word. This is (as Peter says) "the true grace of God" to which we have been called, and wherein we are to stand. We are called to God's eternal glory by Jesus Christ and to be made perfect through faith, patience, and sufferings. This is the true holiness and maturity in Christ that the believers are called to.
3. **A letter to unveil some of the wonderful truths of the salvation of Jesus Christ.** Peter also writes to open up some of the wonderful truths of this salvation that we have been called to. Understanding these things really helps our perspective, builds our understanding, and strengthens our hope for difficult times. He reveals the new birth and how it takes place. He reveals the location and nature of our inheritance in Christ. He reveals how we are kept by the power of God. He reveals how the things which were written in the Old Testament reveal to us God's master plan of salvation (even though the prophets themselves did not fully understand the things that they wrote). He reveals that we are being built up a spiritual house and an holy priesthood to offer up spiritual sacrifices that will be acceptable to God by Jesus Christ. He reveals that Christ is the chief corner stone and that he is precious in our eyes, and that in him we are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, and an holy nation called by God to show forth the praises of God who has called us out of darkness and into his marvelous light.

## II. Overview Outline

- |   |                |
|---|----------------|
| A. Salutation & Introduction  | Ch 1:1-2       |
| B. New Birth & Salvation  | Ch 1:3 - 2:10  |
| <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Inheritance in heaven; salvation prophesied and revealed; the call to holiness; new birth &amp; the word; Christ &amp; his new people.</li> </ul>                |                |
| C. Following Christ as Pilgrims   | Ch 2:11 - 5:11 |
| <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>• Submission to authority; following Jesus' example; suffering for Christ's sake patiently; serving one another; shepherding the flock &amp; vigilance.</li> </ul> |                |
| D. Farewells  | Ch 5:12-14     |

## III. Keys

- A. Key Themes:
  - Jesus Christ the Lamb & Shepherd; grace; salvation; holiness; suffering for righteousness; submission to authority; endurance; judgment.
- B. Key Words/Phrases:

- God, Christ, suffer(ed)(ing)(s), glory, Jesus, evil, good, holy, grace, flesh(ly), “the word”, call(ed)(ing), well, subject(ion), judge(th)(ment), faith(ful).

C. Key Verses:

1. 1:13-16; obedient children unto holiness.
2. 1:22-25; being born again & the word.
3. 2:21-25; following Christ’s example.
4. 2:4-10; Jesus the Cornerstone, and us, his people.
5. 4:12-14; the glory & happiness of suffering with Christ.
6. 5:5-7; humility, submission, and our Lord’s care for us.
7. 5:8-9; being sober and resisting the devil.

IV. Other Good Stuff: Peter opens up some important truths about our salvation, inheritance, & the new birth. He also charges the believers with some important commands concerning the true faith of Christ and suffering for the Lord.

A. Truths about our Salvation, inheritance, and new birth:

1. It’s according to his abundant mercy. (1:3)
2. We’ve been begotten again (born again) to a lively hope! (1:3)
3. Our inheritance is: incorruptible, undefiled, will not fade away, and reserved in heaven for us. (1:4)
4. We are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation (that will be revealed in the last time). (1:5)
5. Our trial of faith is much more precious than gold. (1:7)
6. The end of our faith is the salvation of our souls. (1:9)
7. The prophets prophesied of this grace that has come. (1:10-12)
8. The apostles preached the gospel with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven. (1:12)
9. We are redeemed with the precious blood of Christ. (1:18-19)
10. Christ was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but manifest in these last times for us. (1:20-21)
11. We purify our souls in obeying the truth unto love of the brethren. (1:22)
12. We are born again of incorruptible seed by the word of God. (1:23-25)
13. Jesus is a living stone (rejected by men but chosen by God), and a chief corner stone (laid in Sion): elect, & precious, and made the head of the corner (whoever believes on him shall not be confounded). (2:4-8)
14. We are as lively stones (built up a spiritual house), an holy priesthood, a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, and a peculiar people:
  - a. To show forth the praises of him who called us out of darkness and into his marvelous light.
  - b. Which in time past were not a people and had not obtained mercy, but now are the people of God and have obtained mercy.
15. Christ suffered for us, did no sin, had no guile, did not revile back (when he was reviled), did not threaten (when he suffered), committed himself to the Father who judges righteously, bare our sins by himself in his own body on the tree, once

suffered for sins, was quickened by the Spirit, is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God.

16. Baptism saves us:
  - a. Not water baptism (putting away the filth of the flesh),
  - b. But the answer of a good conscience toward God.
17. The God of all grace has called us to his eternal glory by Christ Jesus.

B. Commands concerning the true faith and suffering for the Lord:

1. We love Jesus (even though we have not seen him)
2. We must gird up the loins of our mind, be sober, hope to the end (for the grace that is to be brought to us at the revelation of Jesus Christ).
3. We are to be as obedient children (not fashioning ourselves according to the former lusts in our ignorance), but we are to be HOLY in all manner of conversation (even as the Lord who called us is holy).
4. We are to love one another with a pure heart fervently.
5. We are to lay aside all malice, guile, hypocrisies, envy, & evil speakings.
6. We are to desire the sincere milk of the word (if we have tasted that the Lord is gracious).
7. We are to abstain from fleshly lusts, as pilgrims & strangers.
8. We are to submit ourselves to every ordinance of man (for the Lord's sake): Citizens to Government leaders; Servants to Masters; Wives to husbands.
9. We are to honour all men, love the brotherhood; fear God; honour the king.
10. If we suffer for doing well, we are to take it patiently.
11. We are to follow in Christ's steps (his example).
12. We are to arm ourselves with a mind to suffer in the flesh.
13. We are to rejoice when we partake of Christ's sufferings.
14. If we suffer as a Christian, we are to not be ashamed, we are to glorify God for it, and commit the keeping of our souls to God in well doing.

## **2 Peter**

**Written around A.D. 65**

I. The Book:

- A. Synopsis: Peter wrote this letter to show the certainty of the prophecy of the word of God. He warns of false teachers and how to spot them, and of scoffers who will deny the 2nd coming. He looks at the 2nd coming, the end of this heaven & earth, and the promise of the new creation.

- B. Authorship: Written by Peter the apostle. Some things to consider regarding Peter and this letter.
1. Peter walked with Jesus throughout his entire 3-and-a-half year ministry. Of the many disciples Jesus had, Peter was one of the 12 chosen apostles to accompany him just about everywhere. Of those 12 apostles, there were 3 apostles that formed the inner circle. Jesus brought these 3 on certain missions and allowed them to see things that the other 9 did not get to see. Peter was one of these 3 in the innermost circle (James and John being the other two). Therefore, Peter was an eyewitness to many special experiences and wonderful works of Jesus (one of which was seeing Jesus transfigured with Moses and Elijah on Mt. Tabor). Peter was blessed by God to experience all these wonderful things. However, Peter considered the scriptures to be more sure (certain) than even his experiences. He came to realize how solid and profound and perfect the scriptures were and exhorted believers to stay true to the word of God and judge everything (and everyone) by them.
  2. Jesus left Peter in charge of the early church and to steward the gospel. Peter was to shepherd the flock by feeding them with the truth of the word of God. He also (as a shepherd) was to protect the flock from wolves and other predators that would seek to devour the flock for their own gain. Peter took this responsibility very seriously and sought to be true to the Lord Jesus as a good shepherd of his sheep.
- C. Audience: It appears Peter was writing to the same audience as in 1st Peter. See the "Audience" section of 1 Peter for more information regarding his audience. Some further information regarding the audience of this letter:
1. As I stated in the "Audience" section of 1 Peter, it appears that many of the people that Peter was writing to were Gentile converts. Often, Gentiles can give more credence to passions and experiences than written truth. This can lead to many corruptions and errors. Another problem was that Gentiles often looked at serving God as a way to a bigger and better life. Unfortunately (when viewed in light of material things), this thinking can lead to many abuses and manipulations in "leadership". Thus, the wrong leaders can gain influence and advantage, and the people who follow them will be ensnared in their traps.
- D. Analysis:
1. **A letter to help the believers make their calling and election sure until the end.** Peter knew what it was to be tried by Satan and fail miserably. He also had seen many over the years that walked with Jesus (or the churches) for a while but then fall away (or be led astray). Peter wanted to see these believers continue to grow to full maturity in diligence and make a grand entrance into the everlasting kingdom of Jesus Christ. Peter exhorted the believers to add 7 important spiritual attributes to their faith (virtue, knowledge, temperance, patience, godliness, brotherly kindness, charity) in order to be fruitful in the Lord. He exhorted them to understand that the faith of Jesus Christ is absolute truth (not fables) based both on real eyewitness testimony and the truth of the scriptures. He exhorted them concerning the reality of false teachers that would arise to lead many astray and of the scoffers in the last days that would mock the hope of the believers concerning Christ's return. However, he prepared the believers ahead of time to know that the Lord's

time is much different from our time (1 day with the Lord is like 1,000 years with us), and that the Lord will come in his time and will destroy this creation and create new heavens and a new earth of righteousness. He helped them to understand that the Lord's longsuffering in this matter is not because he won't come, but because he doesn't want men to perish, but rather, to come to repentance. Therefore, he exhorts the brethren to be holy in all conversation and continue to look forward to this new creation to come.

2. **A letter to warn the believers of the false teachers and apostasy of the church.** Peter reveals the truth that just as there were false prophets in Old Testament Israel, so too will there be false teachers in the New Testament church. And just like the false prophets were more popular and had a bigger following than the true prophets, so too will these false teachers lead many astray. He warns that they will through covetousness make merchandise of the believers and cause many to speak evil of the way of truth. He marks out how the believers can spot these false teachers and assures them of their absolute damnation to come. He also tells the truth that those who turn from the truth after their ways would have been better off to have never known the way of righteousness. He also wants them to be prepared for the scoffers (mockers) who will walk after their own lusts and mock the return of the Lord. Peter assures the believers that these mockers are willingly ignorant of the truth that God once destroyed the entire earth with a flood, and that so too, will he destroy the entire universe with fire. He also lets them know that those who are unlearned and unstable in the word twist Paul's letters to their own destruction, but in reality, he and Paul wrote about the same things.

## II. Overview Outline

- A. Salutation & Introduction Ch 1:1-2
- B. Exhortation to Maturity & Fruitfulness Ch 1:3-21
  - God has given us all things for life & godliness; we must add things to our faith; must hold to the truth of eyewitness testimony and scripture.
- C. Warning of False Teachers Ch 2
  - Peter warns of the false teachers that will bring in damnable heresies and lead many astray and bring damnation upon themselves & their followers.
- D. The Day of the Lord Ch 3
  - Peter warns of scoffers that will mock the 2nd coming of the Lord, but assures the believers that the Lord will destroy this creation and create new heavens & new earth; thus, he exhorts to holiness & steadfastness.

## III. Keys

- A. Key Themes:
  - Growth in the Lord, remembrance, righteousness, knowledge, the word of God, false teachers, the day of the Lord, God's judgment.
- B. Key Words/Phrases:

- Lord, day, “Jesus Christ”, God, know(n)(eth)(ing), knowledge, word(s), (un)righteousness, holy, promise(s), Saviour, glory, judgment, lust(s), deliver(ed), escaped, “Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ”, coming.

C. Key Verses:

1. 1:3-4; his divine power, promises, and nature.
2. 1:19-21; the certainty of the prophecy of scripture.
3. 2:1-3; warning of false teachers.
4. 2:4-10; Jesus the Cornerstone, and us, his people.
5. 3:9; the Lord’s longsuffering unto repentance.
6. 3:10-14; the day of the Lord & our call because of it.

IV. Other Good Stuff: Peter opens up some important truths about our salvation, the word of God, & the return of the Lord. Below are some of those things.

A. Truths about our Salvation:

1. God’s divine power has give us ALL THINGS that pertain to life & godliness through the knowledge of Jesus Christ. (1:3)
2. We are called to glory and virtue. (1:3)
3. We are given exceeding great and precious promises and by these we become partakers of the divine nature. (1:4)
4. The Lord is not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance. (3:9)
5. The Lord’s longsuffering is salvation. (3:15)

B. 7 Spiritual attributes that must be diligently added to our faith: (1:5-9)

1. Virtue
2. Knowledge
3. Temperance
4. Patience
5. Godliness
6. Brotherly Kindness
7. Charity

\* These things (if they are in you and abound) make you to not be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ; but if you lack these things you are blind and cannot see afar off, and have forgotten that you were purged from your old sins.

C. The word of God

1. It is a more sure word of prophecy. (1:19)
  - a. It is like a light that shines in a dark place.
  - b. No prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. (1:20)
  - c. The prophecy:
    - i. Did not come by the will of man. (1:21)
    - ii. Came by holy men of God as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.
2. Paul’s epistles are scripture: (3:15-16)



- a. Some of the things he wrote about are hard to understand.
  - b. Those who are unlearned & unstable wrestle his epistles (and other scriptures) to their own destruction.
- D. The Return of the Lord (the day of the Lord)
  - 1. It is not a cunningly devised fable. (1:16)
  - 2. Peter and the apostles were eyewitnesses of his majesty (his power and coming). (1:16-18)
  - 3. It is when the day dawns and the day star arises in our hearts. (1:19)
  - 4. Scoffers will mock the promise of his coming. (3:3-4)
  - 5. The heavens and the earth are reserved for fire. (3:7)
  - 6. It will come as a thief in the night. (3:10)
    - a. The heavens shall pass away with a great noise.
    - b. The elements shall melt with fervent heat.
    - c. The earth and the works of the earth shall be burned up.

## **1 John**

**Written around A.D. 88**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: Written to Christians of all ages and stages to help them grow closer to the Lord, have fulness of joy, and know that they have eternal life. John is given great discernment to show the clear difference between those who are still in darkness (those who live unrighteous and hate their brethren) and those who are truly in the light (those who live righteously and love their brethren). He is showing what it truly means to "believe in Jesus Christ, the Son of God".
- B. Authorship: Written by John the apostle. (See the "Authorship" section of the gospel of John for more information about John). Some things to consider regarding John and this letter.
  - 1. John was a simple fisherman, but that doesn't mean he was a shallow man. He was a deep thinker. He was a man who understood both the beginnings of things, and thus, the outworking of those things. He also had a clarity to distinguish light from darkness, truth from error, sin from righteousness, love from hate, and the children of God from the children of the devil. He had a way of taking things that might seem complex and not so clear and make them VERY clear and simple. John truly was like a "priest" in the spiritual things of the Lord. He had the ability to "teach [God's] people the difference between the holy and profane" and to help the people of God "discern between the unclean and the clean." God truly gave him

such clarity to draw the line between the light and the darkness and see absolutely NO gray areas in between.

- C. Audience: John was possibly writing to the 7 same churches of Asia Minor that he wrote Revelation to (Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamos, Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia, Laodicea), but we cannot be certain of this. What we do know, is that John was writing to believers of all ages and stages (with the possible exception of “baby Christians”).

1. To be a true Christian, means to follow and believe on Jesus Christ, the Son of God. There are many who get caught up in Christianity or are a part of it for a while, but end up falling away in the end. There are also tares (children of the devil) that are sown amongst the believers within churches. This is why it is so important for all “believers” (throughout all ages) to examine themselves to see if they really are in the faith. Also, for those who are true believers, we need much guidance, reminders, exhortation, and truth along this journey. While there are different stages of growth, strength, and maturity for true believers, no matter what stage we are at, we need the truth of God’s word to keep revealing Jesus and our Father so that we might grow in truth, discernment, faith, & love.

- D. Analysis:

1. **A letter to declare the true God and his Son Jesus Christ so that we might have fellowship with the apostles, the Father, and the Son.** When Jesus called John to come join him and follow him, John had to leave everything behind. While he left family, friends, and relationships behind him, he gained a new family (true brothers and sisters in Christ), and he gained the most important relationships of all: a new Father (the heavenly Father), and a new Saviour (Jesus Christ). John understood that the true call of the gospel is a call into this new and wonderful fellowship (family). It is a call to truly know the living God, and to walk with him for the rest of our days and for ever and ever. However, what John first reveals about the true God, is that he is LIGHT, and in him is no darkness at all. Thus, in order to be a part of this fellowship, and in order to walk with him, we must come out of the darkness and walk in his (the) light. It is impossible to willfully continue in sin, and walk in fellowship with God. It is impossible to say we know him, but not walk in his commandments. However, if we leave the darkness behind and walk in the light, he promises us that the blood of Jesus Christ will cleanse us from ALL sin. John also reveals the truth that God is love. The true God loves people and became flesh and died for them that they might be saved. Thus, to harbor hate and hate your brothers and sisters in Christ, is to prove that you are still in darkness and do not know the true God. One of the ways that you truly know him is by the love you have one for another. This is proof that you have received his Spirit (he is love). You cannot have the Spirit of God and be filled with hate. How can you be filled with hate and have true fellowship with the God of love? John also reveals that there are three the bear record in heaven: the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost, and these three are one.
2. **A letter to expose those who are antichrist and of the devil and his works.** John wrote this letter to expose to the believers those who might appear to be saved (or “were saved”) but are ultimately of the devil. He first charges the

believers to not love the world. Everyone who loves the world and its lusts does not have the love of the Father in them. He then clearly reveals that anyone who denies that Jesus is the Christ, is a liar and antichrist (even if he once seemed to be a disciple of the Lord). Whoever denies the Son, denies the Father also. Whoever continues in sin is not born again, but is of the devil. Whoever hates his brother (especially his brother that walks in righteousness) is of the wicked one like Cain. To hate your brother makes you a murderer (in God's eyes in the spiritual realm). John warns that there are many false prophets gone out into the world, and therefore, charges the believers to try (test/judge) every spirit (both the spirit with which people speak and the words that they speak). We are to discern whether someone is coming with the spirit of truth or the spirit of error. Every spirit that does not confess that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God. (Jesus having come in the flesh both refers to him being a real, flesh-and-blood man in his humanity, and his resurrection in a real body.). Lastly, he warns the little children of the faith to keep themselves from idols.

3. **A letter to confirm the commandments of God so that we might not sin.** John wrote this letter to believers to get them to clearly see that you cannot say that you know God but not keep his commandments. The commandments of God according to John in this new testament are to believe on Jesus Christ, the Son of God, to walk in righteousness, and to love one another. John explains that is impossible to say that you love God (whom you have never seen) but not love your brother who you can see. To love God is to love one another. And to love one another is to prove that you do indeed love God. God's will is for us to keep his commandments and not live in sin.
4. **A letter to help true believers know that they have eternal life.** John wrote this letter to believers to help them see the proofs within their own lives that they are indeed the children of God (and thus, have eternal life). This little book can definitely be a great way to "examine yourself" to see if you truly are in the faith. John gives the real proofs to verify those who are in the light, versus those who are still in darkness; those who know him, versus those who do not; those who abide in him, versus those who are not of him. This book helps you confirm if you truly believe in Jesus, the Son of God, or if you don't believe in him.

## II. Overview Outline

- A. Introduction & Call to the Fellowship Ch 1:1-4
  - The apostles call us to the fellowship they have with the Father & Son.
- B. God is light: Walking in the light & his commandments Ch 1:5 - 2:17
  - God is light; we cannot walk in darkness and know God; if we walk in the light we keep his commandments, love our brother, and the truth is in us.
- C. God is truth: Abiding in Father & Son Ch 2:18-29
  - There are many antichrists that depart from the faith and deny the Father & the Son; we are to abide in the truth and let the anointing abide in us.

- D. The children of God: Walking in righteousness & love Ch 3
  - The children of God are seen by their life of righteousness and love towards their brothers; the children of devil are the opposite.
- E. The Spirit of God: Confessing Jesus & truth Ch 4:1-6
  - Testing the spirits; discerning the spirit of truth from the spirit of error.
- F. God is love: Love toward us & one another Ch 4:7-21
  - God's great love to us; our love for him & one another.
- G. Overcoming Faith: The Son & eternal life Ch 5
  - Believing in Jesus; overcoming the world; the witness & record; eternal life in the Son in us; confidence in prayer;

### III. Keys

- A. Key Themes:
  - God, The word, eternal life, fellowship, the Father & the Son, light & darkness, sin(s) & righteousness, God's commandments & knowing him, the world & antichrist, truth & error, liars, children of God & children of the devil, love & hate, believing/faith & overcoming.
- B. Key Words/Phrases:
  - we, God, love(th)(d), have/hath, know(eth)(n), us, sin(s)(neth)(ned), world, life, Son. hear(d)(eth), Father, commandment(s), Spirit/spirit(s), write/written, children, abide(th), see(n), righteous(ness), truth, whosoever, believe(d)(th), keep(eth), hereby, beginning, "Jesus Christ", born, manifest(ed), darkness, light, overcome(th).
- C. Key Verses:
  1. 1:3; the invitation into the fellowship.
  2. 1:5-7; God is light; walking in darkness or light.
  3. 2:1-2; call to not sin, but Jesus is our advocate & full payment.
  4. 2:15-17; love of the world or love of the Father.
  5. 3:7-10; righteousness or sin; children of God or children of the devil.
  6. 3:23-24; the commandments of God.
  7. 4:1; try (test) the spirits.
  8. 4:7-11; love one another; love Is of God; God is love.
  9. 4:18-19; perfect love casts out all fear; he first loved us.
  10. 5:4-5; overcoming faith as a child of God.
  11. 5:7; the 3 that bear record in heaven are one.
  12. 5:11-13; the record and assurance of eternal life in the Son.
  13. 5:20; summary of the book.

IV. Other Good Stuff: John wrote this little book for many reasons, all of which are important. In this little book he gives many proofs to assure the children of God that they truly know the Father and the Son, and have eternal life. Below are lists of the reasons

why John wrote this book and proofs that John gives regarding how that we can know that we know him:

A. Reasons why John wrote this book:

1. That we may have fellowship with the apostles, the Father, and his Son Jesus Christ. (1:3)
2. That our joy might be full. (1:4)
3. To know that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all. (1:5)
4. So that we will not sin. (2:1)
5. To know and keep the new commandment (to love one another). (2:8)
6. For the little children (of the faith) because:
  - a. Their sins are forgiven for his name's sake. (2:12)
  - b. They have known the Father. (2:13)
7. For the young men (of the faith) because:
  - a. They are strong. (2:14)
  - b. The word of God abides in them. (2:14)
  - c. They have overcome the wicked one. (2:13,14)
8. For the fathers (of the faith) because they have known him that is from the beginning (Jesus, the Word). (2:13,14)
9. Because we know the truth, and no lie is of the truth. (2:21)
10. To warn us about those that would seduce us. (2:26)
11. So that we may know that we have eternal life. (5:13)
12. So that we may believe on the name of the Son of God. (5:13)

B. Proofs that we truly know him:

1. We walk in the light (as he is in the light). (1:7)
2. We have fellowship one with another. (1:7)
3. We are being cleansed from all sin. (1:7)
4. We know that we have sin and have sinned. (1:8,10)
5. We confess our sins. (1:9)
6. We keep his commandments. (2:3)
7. We see the love of God being perfected in us. (2:5)
8. We love the brethren (one another). (2:9-11; 3:3,14; 4:11)
9. We don't love the world. (2:15)
10. We acknowledge both the Father and the Son. (2:22-23)
11. The anointing within us teaches us all truth. (2:27)
12. We do righteousness. (2:29; 3:7)
13. We purify ourselves. (3:3)
14. We don't continue in sin. (3:6,8-10)
15. We don't just love in word, but we love in deed and in truth. (3:18-19)
16. His Spirit he has given us. (3:24; 4:13)
17. We overcome false prophets & teachers (don't follow them). (4:1-5)

18. We hear from the Lord and listen to his messengers (apostles, etc). (4:6)
19. We confess that Jesus is the Son of God. (4:15)
20. We dwell in love. (4:16)
21. We believe that Jesus is the Christ. (5:1)
22. We overcome the world. (5:4-5)

## 2 John

**Written around A.D. 88**

### I. The Book:

- A. Synopsis: A short letter written by John the apostle to a lady and her children to emphasize the importance of the truth of the doctrine of Christ, and that those who deviate from this truth are not really Christians but are antichrist. He also shows that true love is manifested by keeping God's commands.
- B. Authorship: Written by John the apostle. (See the "Authorship" section of the gospel of John and 1 John for more information about John). Some things to consider regarding John and this letter.
  - When Jesus was on the cross, he gave John the responsibility to care for his mother Mary. Based on this and all of the things that John wrote, it is clear that God gave John a shepherd's heart to care for the Lord's flock. God called him to teach, love, oversee, protect, and guide the flock into the truth of Jesus Christ so that they might rejoice at his return and receive a full reward.
- C. Audience: John was writing to a believing lady and her children.
  - We don't know much about this lady. We know that she was a believer and was guiding her children faithfully into the truth of the Lord. She may likely have been a widow, or she may have been married to an unbeliever, but nothing is conclusive. However, John calls her the "elect lady", and it appears that she was one held in high esteem not only by the great apostle, but also by "all they that have known the truth." She appears to have been a woman that was regarded highly in the early church and perhaps, of great importance to the body of Christ.
- D. Analysis:
  1. **A letter to encourage this lady and her children to continue in the truth of Christ.** John loved this lady and her children in the truth. He wrote to her for the truth's sake which dwells in us for ever. He was so happy to find that her children

were walking in truth. And he warns her about the many deceivers and antichrists that have come into the world who do not confess Jesus Christ to have come in the flesh. They do not abide in Christ's doctrine (instruction). He warns her of these people and tells her to not receive such in her house nor bid them God speed. The truth is so important, and must be continued in to receive a full reward.

2. **A letter to exhort unto love.** John wrote this letter to exhort this lady to continue in the commandment to love one another. And this love, he explains, is to walk after God's commandments. The true love of God is not just emotions and warm feelings, but it is continuing in obedience to the Lord and laying down our lives for one another in love and action.

## II. Overview Outline

- A. Greeting & Introduction vs 1-3
  - Everything is based in truth & love
- B. Joy & Request vs 4-6
  - Joy in the children walking in truth; request to continue in love.
- C. Warning & Admonitions vs 7-11
  - Many deceivers; must watch out and continue in Christ's doctrine.
- D. Hope & Farewell vs 12-13
  - Hope to come soon and speak face-to-face.

## III. Keys

- A. Key Themes:
  - truth, love, commandments, continuance, Christ's doctrine, deceivers.
- B. Key Words/Phrases:
  - truth('s), love, God, Father, Christ, commandment(s), doctrine.
- C. Key Verses:
  1. vs 5; the call to love another.
  2. vs 9; abiding or not abiding in the doctrine of Christ.

## IV. Other Good Stuff: There are some good things to be learned from the information that can be gained regarding the key themes of this letter:

- A. Truth & Love:
  1. Spiritual leaders love those in the truth. (1)
  2. All who know the truth love those in the truth. (1)
  3. John wrote for the truth's sake. (2)
  4. The truth dwells in us, and will be with us for ever. (2)
  5. Grace, mercy, and peace are all in truth & love. (3)
  6. Walking in the truth brings great rejoicing to spiritual leaders. (4)
  7. We are to love one another (the commandment from the beginning). (5)
  8. True love is to walk after his (Christ's) commandments. (6)

B. Commandments & Doctrine

1. The commandment from the beginning is to love one another. (5)
2. True love is to walk after his commandments. (6)
3. Those who transgress and do not abide in the doctrine of Christ do not have (know) God. (9)
4. Those who abide in the doctrine of Christ have both the Father & Son. (9)
5. Anyone who does not bring this doctrine (deceivers) should not be received into a believer's home nor bidden God speed. (10)

### **3 John**

**Written around A.D. 88**

I. The Book:

- A. Synopsis: A short letter written by John the apostle to a faithful man named Gaius who walked according to the truth in faithfulness and charity. He is warned of prideful, evil leaders in the church (like Diotrephes) and commended to follow good, honest leaders (like Demetrius).
- B. Authorship: Written by John the apostle. (See the "Authorship" section of the gospel of John, 1 John, & 2 John for more information about John). Some things to consider regarding John and this letter.
  - John was an excellent listener. He was a man who loved the truth. He drank in the doctrine of Jesus Christ while he was with Jesus. He paid careful attention specifically to truth about the Father, the Son, and the Spirit, and how they work together. He also paid careful attention to the truth about man, and important things such as faith, unbelief, love, hate, good, evil, light, and darkness. Thus, he had excellent understanding and discernment in spiritual matters and with people. The Lord made him a shepherd of the flock to oversee, nurture, and protect the flock.
- C. Audience: The well beloved Gaius. Some information regarding Gaius:
  - The name "Gaius" appears four other times in the scriptures (Acts 19:29; 20:4; Romans 16:23; & 1 Corinthians 1:14). Upon a careful examination of these references, it appears that there are probably at least 3 different Gaius' from those passages (Gaius evidently was quite a common Roman name back then). The Gaius whom John is writing to though, appears to be a completely different person from all the other ones mentioned. The reason for this conclusion, is that all the



other ones were converts of Paul. Whereas this Gaius, appears to be (from vs 4) a convert of John. So, aside from what is written here in this epistle, there is not much else known about this man. From this letter it appears that he was a faithful brother in Christ, a generous host of excellent hospitality, and of importance in the church. He does not appear to be a bishop. But he is certainly important and growing properly in the Lord.

D. Analysis:

1. **A letter to encourage this brother to continue to assist men of God representing the true gospel.** John loved this brother and desired him to continue to be a blessing in the church. He was faithful in his hospitality and assistance both to the brethren and strangers. And he had a good reputation among many who had witnessed his charity within the church. John had possibly sent forth some Jewish brothers in Christ (or knew of their intentions) to come to visit the church that Gaius was a part of, and John desired Gaius to assist them in their journey (possibly financially) and to receive them (which is implied to lodge them). Evidently there was a man in Gaius' church who was prideful and evil and had gained a prominent position in the church by the name of Diotrephes. This man spoke evil of these men of God coming to town and was forbidding anyone in the church from lodging them and threatening anyone who assisted or lodged them to throw them out of the church. However there was a true brother in the church by the name of Demetrius who probably assisted such men in the past (and/or currently assisting), and John encouraged Gaius to follow after such an example.
2. **A letter to commend and advise this brother in Christ unto that which is good.** John loved this brother in the truth. He desired him to prosper and be in health. He acknowledged that his soul was prospering and that the truth was in Gaius and Gaius was walking in the truth. This brought great joy to John. He commends Gaius for his faithfulness in his ministering and generosity both to the brethren and strangers. John advises him to continue in this faithfulness and to assist the men of God coming to town. He warns him of an evil leader in the church, and exhorts him not to follow that which is evil. He advises him rather to follow that which is good and points out a good faithful man in the truth that Gaius can follow.

## II. Overview Outline

- |  |          |
|--|----------|
| A. Greeting & Introduction   | vs 1-4   |
| • John's personal desire and great joy.                                  |          |
| B. Encouragement & Explanation   | vs 5-8   |
| • Gaius is encouraged to continue in charity and receive the men of God. |          |
| C. Condemnation & Commendation   | vs 9-12  |
| • Diotrephes is exposed and warned against; Demetrius is commended.      |          |
| D. Hope & Farewell   | vs 13-14 |
| • Hope to come soon and speak face-to-face.                              |          |

### III. Keys

#### A. Key Themes:

- truth, brotherly kindness, hospitality, assisting the gospel, the church.

#### B. Key Words/Phrases:

- truth('s), beloved, brethren, church, receive(th), good.

#### C. Key Verses:

1. vs 4; no greater joy than my children walk in truth.
2. vs 11; don't follow evil, follow good.

### IV. Other Good Stuff: There are some very important things to learn about some of the different types of people that you will meet in churches through the information about the 3 men named in this epistle. Below is some information about these men:

#### A. Gaius (a true believer growing in the Lord):

1. Loved by established spiritual elders. (1)
2. His soul is prosperous (but not necessarily financially or in health). (2)
3. The truth is within him and he walks in the truth. (3)
4. He does everything faithfully without partiality. (5)
5. His charity is known and testified of amongst the believers. (6)
6. He's exhorted to assist and receive visiting men of God. (6-8)
7. He's exhorted to not follow evil, but to follow after what is good. (11)

#### B. Diotrophes (an evil leader in the church who doesn't know God):

1. He loves to have the preeminence in the church. (9)
2. He prates against established spiritual leaders with malicious words in their absence. (10)
3. It's not enough for him to just speak evil of the men of God but: (10)
  - a. He himself won't receive the brethren.
  - b. He forbids others to receive them.
  - c. Those who do receive the brethren he casts out of the church.

#### C. Demetrius (a good spiritual leader in the church):

1. He has a good report of all men. (12)
2. He has a good report of the truth itself (strong in the truth). (12)
3. He has a good report of the established spiritual leaders in the body of Christ. (12)

- \* Ultimately, John says that we must follow that which is good, not that which is evil. And then he says that whoever does good is of God; but he that does evil has not seen God (doesn't know God). So titles, positions, speeches, sermons, etc, ultimately don't matter; it is the actions that people do that reveals who they truly are.

## Jude

Written around A.D. 68

### I. The Book:

- A. Synopsis: A powerful letter that admonishes us to battle for the true gospel because ungodly men have crept into the church. These men are lost and turn God's grace into lasciviousness. Jude promises God will judge them by giving examples of God's judgment from the OT. He shows us their attributes so we can identify them, stay away from them, and help others stay away from them. He exhorts the believers unto holiness, love, and rescuing others from the judgment to come.
- B. Authorship: Written by Jude, the brother of James (and half-brother of Jesus). Some information regarding Jude and this letter:
  - 1. Jude (also known as "Judas", Matthew 13:55) was the half brother of Jesus Christ. He was one of the four sons that Mary and Joseph had together (James, Josés, Simon, & Jude). One thing we see in the gospels, is that Jesus' brothers did not believe on him during most of his ministry (if not through all his ministry). However, at some point James and Jude (and possibly the 2 other ones...) definitely came to realize and believe that their brother was the Son of God.
  - 2. Jude seems to have become an important voice in the early church. He definitely was a powerful prophetic voice to both warn the early church of the seeds of Satan that had infiltrated the churches and call the true body of Christ to fight for the truth of the gospel.
  - 3. According to Hippolytus, Jude preached in Greece and Macedonia where he ultimately was martyred.
- C. Audience: "Them that are sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, and called;"
  - It's possible that Jude was writing to the same churches that Peter wrote his epistles to. The reasons for this thinking is that Jude really appears to be built upon the letter of 2 Peter. Peter was writing to warn the believers of the false teachers that would come into the church and deny the Lord, and of the mockers that would deny the 2nd coming of Christ. Jude seems to be pointing out to the believers that they have already crept in, and that now they must fight for the purity of the faith. Verses 17-18 may indicate he is writing to the same people that Peter warned of such things.
- D. Analysis:
  - 1. **A letter to exhort the believers to earnestly contend for the faith.** Jude wanted to write a letter to these believers about salvation. However, based upon what he saw (and the Spirit's leading) he felt the situation within the church(es) was in such jeopardy that he had to exhort them to fight for the true faith and purity of the body. Jude warns that ungodly men have crept in unawares into the churches that turn the grace of God into lasciviousness (looseness and impurity), and deny the only Lord God, and the Lord Jesus Christ. He points them back to true stories from the Old Testament of how God brought judgment upon ungodly, unbelieving men and angels. He pronounces that they are cursed, following in the ways of Cain, Balaam,

and Core (Korah). He marks out many ways on how to spot them, and tells of their end destruction. However, despite all this, he never tells the believers to fight against them, or even separate from them. Rather, he tells them to continue to build up themselves in their most holy faith, to pray in the Holy Ghost, and to keep themselves in the love of God. He exhorts them to continue to look for the Lord Jesus and reach out to save others. This is a letter to fight for the faith by not being deceived, and by standing fast and continuing to grow in the will of God. In the end, he says that the ungodly will separate themselves from the flock.

## II. Overview Outline

- A. Greeting & Introduction vs 1-2
- B. The Purpose of the Letter vs 3-4
  - To contend for the faith due to the men that have crept in.
- C. The Ungodly Men who have crept in vs 4-19
  - Jude warns of them; shows similar examples from the OT; pronounces curses upon them; and exposes them and their ways.
- D. Exhortation to the beloved believers vs 20-23
  - Must build themselves up in the most holy faith; continue in prayer, the love of God, looking for Christ's return, and reaching out to save others.
- E. Honour & Worship vs 24-25
  - All glory and majesty, power and dominion to the only wise God.

## III. Keys

- A. Key Themes:
  - judgment, ungodliness, the coming of the Lord, staying true.
- B. Key Words/Phrases:
  - Lord, ungodly, God, "Jesus Christ", beloved, ever(last), flesh, eternal.
- C. Key Verses:
  - 1. vs 4; warning of the ungodly men that have crept in.
  - 2. vs 17-18; call to remember the words of the apostles.
  - 3. vs 20-23; call to continuance and reaching out.

## IV. Other Good Stuff: There are some very important and powerful truths to lay to heart in this little epistle: Truths about the ungodly men who creep into the churches and corrupt the faith, truths from the Old Testament regarding these matters, and important exhortations for believers. Below are some of these:

The Ungodly Men (they are ordained to this condemnation of old):

- A. What they do:
  - 1. They have crept in (or creep in) unawares. (4)
  - 2. Turn the grace of God into lasciviousness. (4)

3. Deny the only Lord God, and the Lord Jesus Christ. (4)
  4. Defile the flesh. (8)
  5. Despise dominion (authority). (8)
  6. Corrupt themselves like brute beasts (in base things). (10)
  7. Go after the way of Cain. (11)
  8. Run greedily for reward (like Balaam). (11)
  9. Separate themselves. (19)
- B. What they are:
1. Ungodly men. (4)
  2. Filthy dreamers. (8)
  3. Murmurers. (16)
  4. Complainers (walking after their own lusts). (16)
  5. Mockers (walking after their own ungodly lusts). (18)
  6. Sensual (not having the Spirit). (19)
- C. What they speak:
1. Evil of dignities (leaders/authorities). (8)
  2. Evil of things that they know nothing of. (10)
  3. Gainsaying like Core (Korah). (11)
  4. Great swelling words (having men's persons in admiration because of advantage). (16)
- D. 5 Metaphors to describe them: (12-13)
1. Spots in the feasts of charity (feeding themselves without fear).
  2. Clouds without water (carried about of winds).
  3. Trees:
    - a. Whose fruit withereth.
    - b. Without fruit.
    - c. Twice Dead.
    - d. Plucked up by the roots.
  4. Raging waves of the sea (foaming out their own shame).
  5. Wandering stars (to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness forever).
- Other Important Things:
- A. Old Testament Examples of Judgment:
1. The people who came out of Egypt that did not believe were saved out of Egypt but afterwards destroyed. (appeared to be God's people)
  2. The angels that did not keep their first estate and left their own habitation are reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the final judgment. (were God's angels... but no more)
  3. Sodom and Gomorrha (and Admah, and Zeboim) which gave themselves over to fornication and went after strange flesh suffered the vengeance of eternal fire. (filthy, vile people)
- B. Old Testament People that the ungodly have followed:

1. Cain: bad heart, bad offering, angry, envious, prideful, hateful, murderer, liar, selfish, complainer.
2. Balaam: appears to be a man of truth, appears to be a prophet of God, speaks truth publicly, but secretly compromises for love of money.
3. Core (Korah): appears to be a man of the people, appears to be a “holy” man, “fights” for the “rights” of the people, but ultimately is envious, power-hungry, out-of-order, and despises God’s chosen leaders.

C. Exhortations for Believers:

1. Must earnestly contend for the faith (the faith that Jesus & the apostles delivered to the saints). (3)
2. Must remember truths from the Scriptures. (5)
3. Must remember the words spoken by the apostles of the Lord. (17)
4. Must build ourselves up in our most holy faith. (20)
5. Must pray in the Holy Ghost. (20)
6. Must keep ourselves in the love of God. (21)
7. Must look for the mercy of our Lord Jesus unto eternal life. (21)
8. Must have compassion on some and make a difference. (22)
9. Must save other with fear: pulling them out of the fire; hating the garment spotted by the flesh. (23)

D. What God can do:

1. Sanctify us. (1)
2. Preserve us in Jesus Christ. (1)
3. Keep us from falling. (24)
4. Present us faultless before the presence of his glory (with exceeding great joy). (24)

## **The Revelation of Jesus Christ**

**A.D. 91-96**

### **I. The Book:**

- A. Synopsis: This is the revelation that Jesus Christ gave to John the apostle to send to 7 churches. John received special messages for these specific churches, then he got to see heaven itself, and then the events of the tribulation, the return of Christ, the millennial kingdom, the final judgment, and the new creation. This is a wonderful and glorious book that brings many of the themes introduced back in Genesis (and many other books) full circle to the conclusion and culmination of this creation into the perfect new creation that will be reserved only for those who overcome by faith in Christ Jesus. It is very difficult to understand certain portions apart from a knowledge of the rest of the scriptures; and it is very sobering and exciting to see the imminence of the Lord's return and future for his children.
- B. Authorship: Written by John the apostle. (See the "Authorship" section of the Gospel of John, 1, 2, & 3 John for more information about John). Here are some things to consider about John:
  - 1. As we've stated before, John was the beloved disciple of the Lord Jesus. He was the closest to the heart of Christ of all the apostles. Thus, he was the only one that was not martyred, but got to live out to his old age. Evidently Jesus had a very special and specific role for John in the early church and the churches until the return of the Lord. Thus, he was the one who received this special revelation of the end and had the honor of writing it down to preserve it for God's people.
  - 2. It appears that John was very observant and an excellent listener. Thus, the Lord reserved him to be able to SEE and HEAR many things in this revelation.
- C. Audience: The servants of Jesus Christ, and the following 7 churches of Asia Minor specifically: Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamos, Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia, & Laodicea. Some more information regarding these believers:
  - 1. Each church had different strengths, weaknesses, challenges, and commandments (as you can see in chapters 2 & 3), but all of them were facing some of the same general conditions of the time. At that point and time, all of the original apostles were dead, except John. The church had seen the prophecies of Christ regarding Jerusalem come true and had seen the end of Temple worship and sacrifices. Jerusalem and the temple had been destroyed in A.D. 70. Many Jews had been killed, and most others had been scattered throughout the Roman Empire. Rome was still the dominant power in the world. Rome's persecution was not nearly as intense as during the time of Nero, but the Jews (who were unconverted), were still very anti-Christ and some did everything they could to slander, hinder, and even raise persecution against Christians that were actively evangelizing. This was an important time for the body of Christ as most of the apostles were gone, and by this time (being about 65 years after Christ went back to heaven) many false teachers, prophets, doctrines, and corruptions had infiltrated the churches to try to lead the believers away from the true gospel of Christ. With many of the eyewitnesses of Jesus gone, this was a time when they were really in the 2nd generation (and almost 3rd generation) of believers. The

churches needed to be established in the truth of Christ; they needed to understand that he is the head of the church and that it is all about him; they needed to be established properly and empowered by the Spirit of the living God to walk worthy of him no matter what adversity or opposition they might face. They needed to be confirmed in the reality and supremacy of the spiritual realm and the ultimate hope of Christ's return to destroy the wicked and bring his kingdom and saints to this earth. They needed to be confirmed in his faith to endure persecution and even death. This was the general condition of the churches to whom John was writing.

2. While this book was written specifically to the 7 churches of Asia Minor during that time, the Lord also knew that he wasn't going to return for another 2,000 years or so; and so this book wasn't just for those 7 churches, but was also written to ALL of the Lord's servants for the past 2,000 years to help us refocus, grow in faith and hope, and be prepared to meet our Lord Jesus Christ and enter his kingdom.

D. Analysis:

1. **A book to prepare the servants of Jesus Christ to meet him.** The Lord wants his bride (the church) to be presented holy and spotless to him when we meet him. He wants us to be pure, mature, and faithful to him until the end no matter what the cost. He doesn't want us losing focus of him, giving place to fears, mingling with false doctrine or false teachers, slacking off, falling asleep, falling into sin, becoming like the world, or anything else that will pull us away from him. He is our Lord. He is our Bridegroom. And he is jealous and zealous over his bride. The first 3 chapters of this book present Jesus as the Warrior King that he is that requires complete commitment and chastity to him. He will encourage his churches, he will commend them where they are worthy of commendation, but he will also rebuke and chasten those whom he loves. He will demand repentance where repentance is needed. He will always point them back to himself and to hear the things that the Spirit saith to the churches. Revelation reveals the seriousness and supreme importance of being true to him. He wants us prepared to meet him.
2. **A book to reveal the things that are to come in heaven and earth.** John got to hear God speak to him directly. He got to meet the resurrected/glorified Jesus and hear his testimony. He got to be taken up into heaven in spirit and see the throne room of God. He got to be taken into the future and see the things that would happen upon this earth and in heaven during the final "tribulation" to come upon this world. He got to see God's warnings and plagues and man's response. He got to see Satan and his angels cast to earth with great wrath desiring to destroy the remnant of God's people. He got to see the Beast rise out of the sea and the Dragon give his seat, and authority, and power to the Beast for the final 42 months of great tribulation. He got to see God sending angels to warn of his coming wrath and the Son of man coming in the clouds to reap the earth. He got to see the final plagues of God's wrath poured out upon the earth and the Beast's kingdom all leading to the gathering of the battle of Armageddon. He got to see the final destruction of Babylon the Great, the great whore. He also got to see heaven opened and Jesus Christ (as the Warrior King) returning on a white horse with his



armies following him to destroy the Beast and his kingdom. He got to see Satan bound for 1,000 years and the dead raised to live and reign with Christ for 1,000 years. He got to see Satan loosed at the end of the 1,000 years and deceive many of the nations to turn against Christ and try to destroy him one last time. He saw fire from heaven burn them all up and Satan cast into the lake of Fire. He got to see the Great White throne of God and the resurrection of the dead unto damnation. He saw the final judgment and all the dead cast into the lake of fire, which is the 2nd death. After this, he got to see the new heaven and the new earth and the new Jerusalem coming out of heaven descending to the earth. This is a book given to reveal the things that are to come all the way into the new creation and fulness of the kingdom of God.

3. **A book to reveal the culmination and restitution of all things prophesied throughout the ages and written in the scriptures.** The book of Revelation is the last book of the Bible for a reason. This book reveals the ultimate fulfillment of all the prophecies throughout the scriptures (both the Old & New Testaments). Many themes and words given from Genesis throughout Jude all come to final fruition and fulfillment in Revelation. Revelation is not a book to be feared. We should not avoid it. In fact, there is a blessing for those who hear, read, and keep the things that are written therein. We should continuously read it and ask God for hearts to obey and understand what is written therein. However, we must also understand, that in order to get a full understanding of this book, we will need to have spent time in ALL the scriptures. Some very key books that will help unlock things in Revelation would be Genesis, Exodus, Psalms, Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Daniel, Joel, Micah, Nahum, Habakkuk, Zephaniah, Zechariah, Matthew, Luke, John, Acts, 1 Corinthians, 1 & 2 Thessalonians, Hebrews, 2 Peter, & Jude. While these are maybe more key books for specific prophecies and themes that you will see come full circle in Revelation, ultimately, all the scriptures lead up to and point to the restitution of all things that is revealed in Revelation. This is why Revelation ends with the stern warning against adding to or taking away from the prophecy of this book. The entire Bible & Revelation are the sacred, holy scriptures, and are not to be tampered with by man. God's word is true and faithful, and EVERYTHING that he has promised will come to pass.

## II. Overview Outline

- |  |           |
|--|-----------|
| A. Preface, Salutation & Introduction  | Ch 1:1-8  |
| B. Jesus & John on Patmos  | Ch 1:9-20 |
| • Jesus appears to John, introduces himself, & reveals some key things.  |           |
| C. Jesus' Message to the 7 Churches  | Ch 2-3    |
| • Jesus introduces himself, commends, corrects/rebukes, calls to repent, offers a promise for overcoming, and admonishes those who can hear. |           |
| D. John sees Heaven  | Ch 4-5    |
| • The Father & throne room revealed; Jesus (the Lamb) is revealed.   |           |
| E. The 7 year Tribulation:   | Ch 6-19   |

1. The 7 seals & sealed servants of God - 6 - 8:5
2. The 7 trumpets & 2 prophets - 8 - 11
3. Israel, Satan, the Beast, the Lamb, & final warnings - 12-14
4. The 7 vials of wrath - 15-16
5. Babylon & the Beast - 17-18
- F. The Restitution of all things Ch 19-20
  - Christ's return; the resurrections, millennial kingdom, & final judgment.
- G. The New Creation Ch 21-22
  - The new heaven, new earth, and new Jerusalem unveiled.

### III. Keys

#### A. Key Characters:

- Jesus Christ (the Lamb)
- the Father (the Lord God Almighty)
- John the apostle
- the 4 beasts (seraphim)
- the 24 elders
- the 144,000 sealed of Israel
- the 7 angels before God
- the mighty angel
- the 2 witnesses/prophets of God
- the woman in heaven (Israel)
- the great red dragon (Satan)
- the Beast rise up out of the sea (the Antichrist & his kingdom)
- the lamb-like beast from the earth (the false prophet)
- the great whore (Babylon the Great)
- The lamb's wife (the saints/church/New Jerusalem)

#### B. Key Words/Phrases:

- **Specific People:** God (99x); the beast (32); Lamb (29); Lord(s)('s) (25); Jesus (14); Satan/Devil (13); Christ (11); Spirit (11)
- **People/Beings:** angel(s)('s) (76x); man (33); beast(s) (27); men (25); king(s) (23); church(es) (20); saints (13); elders (12); prophet(s)(ess)(12)
- **Places:** earth (88x); heaven(s) (57); city (28); sea (26); temple (16)
- **Sense words:** say(est)(ing)(ings) (64x); voice(s) (50); hear(d) (44); saw (42); see(st) (17); word(s) (13)
- **Action words:** give(th)(n) (44x); open(ed)(eth) (27); worship(ped) (24); cast(eth) (23); sat (22); works (18); fell (16); sit(teth)(ting) (12); overcometh (8)
- **Descriptive words:** great (72x); holy (16); glory (16); fear(ful) (10)
- **Objects:** throne(s) (39x); book (28); star(s) (14); altar (8); trumpet(s) (7)
- **Numbers:** seven(th) (59x); four(th) (38); one (25); third (22); twelve(22); first (19); two (13); three (11); ten (11); number (11)
- **Various:** name(s) (36x); seal(s)(ed) (32); fire (26); blood(19); white (19); part (19); water(s) (18); death (17); down (17); plague(s) (12)

### C. Key Verses:

1. 1:3; blessings for reading.
2. 1:5-7; Jesus Christ; what he has made us; he's coming.
3. 1:18; alive for evermore; keys of hell & death.
4. 2:23; Jesus' authority to execute judgment; he searches the hearts.
5. 3:7; the key of David; he opens and no man shuts.
6. 3:20-22; door knocking; to sit down in his throne; he that hath an ear.
7. 4:11; the Lord is worthy; all things created for his pleasure.
8. 5:5-6; the Lion of Judah hath prevailed and is worthy; the Lamb.
9. 6:12-17; the 6th seal; sun darkened, etc...
10. 7:17; promises for the saints.
11. 9:20-21; men will not repent.
12. 11:15; the 7th trumpet; the kingdoms declared to be the Lord's.
13. 12:9-11; the devil cast down to the earth; overcoming by the blood.
14. 13:18; the number of the beast.
15. 14:6-7; the everlasting gospel: fear God, give glory to him, worship him.
16. 15:3-4; all nations shall come and worship the Lord God Almighty.
17. 17:5; Mystery, Babylon the Great.
18. 18:4; the call to God's people to come out of Babylon.
19. 19:11-16; heaven opened; he that sits on the white horse coming back.
20. 20:6; blessing of the first resurrection.
21. 20:11-15; the final judgment before the great white throne.
22. 21:1-8; the announcements of the new heaven and new earth.
23. 22:6-7; the sayings are true and faithful; he comes quickly.
24. 22:10; the prophecy not sealed b/c the time is at hand.
25. 22:17; the calls to come and drink of the water of life freely.
26. 22:18-19; don't add or take away from the prophecy.

### IV. Other Good Stuff: Fascinating Studies:

1. The Glorified Jesus Christ (chapters 1 & 19).
2. The 7 messages to the 7 churches (every part of them).
3. The 7 overcomer promises (noting the order with other key 7's in the scriptures like in 2 Peter 1:5-7; also considering 2 Chronicles 9:18).
4. The One on the throne and the throne room.
5. The 4 beasts in heaven compared with Isaiah 6:1-3 & Ezekiel 1 & 10.
6. The Lion & the Lamb!
7. Comparing the 4 horseman released at the first 4 seals with Zechariah 6:1-8.
8. Lining up and thoroughly studying the 7 seals with the 7 trumpets with the 7 vials of wrath (noting connections and patterns).
9. The 144,000 sealed servants of Israel (also noting connection w/21:17).

10. The locusts of the bottomless pit.
11. The horseman army compared with Joel 2:1-11.
12. The mighty angel of chapter 10.
13. The 7th trumpet and all the things that happen during and afterwards.
14. The woman clothed with the sun and the male child caught up to heaven (considering Joseph's dream in Genesis 37:9-11).
15. The dragon, & the beast that ascends out of the sea (considering the heads, horns, crowns, and gaining info from Daniel 7, Job 41, Isaiah 27:1, Daniel 2:41-45, etc...).
16. The false prophet (considering different false prophets through the word like Balaam, the false prophets of Jezebel, Pashur, etc...).
17. The 3 angels preaching to the world in 14:6-12.
18. The reaping of the Son of man; and the reaping of the angel (14:13-20).
19. Babylon the great whore & her judgment (considering the 7 mountains, the waters, the 10 horns of the beast; considering passages like Psalm 83, Isaiah 13-14, Ezekiel 23, Jeremiah 50-51, Zechariah 5:5-11).
20. The return of Christ & the battle of Armageddon (considering Joel 3, Zechariah 14, Matthew 24, etc...).
21. The 2 resurrections and the millennial kingdom of Christ (considering passages like Isaiah 11, Ezekiel 37, 40-48, Daniel 12, 1 Corinthians 15, etc...).
22. The devil's final deception & the battle of Gog & Magog (w/Ezekiel 38).
23. The final great white throne judgment (comparing with other judgment passages in the scriptures such as Matthew 11:20-24; 12:38-42; 25:31-46; Psalm 1:4-6; John 5:22-30; 12:44-50; etc...).
24. The new heaven & new earth (as compared with the 1st heaven & earth).
25. The new Jerusalem (who might live in it as opposed to who will live on the new earth; the foundations, the gates, the walls, the dimensions, the precious stones, etc..., comparisons with the church in Ephesians).
26. The water of life & the tree of life (studying throughout the scriptures).
27. 22:11 possibly with the parable of the sower, considering Lot & Abram...
28. 22:14-15: Proper harmonizing with grace (no contradiction).
29. 22:18-19; The importance & severity of the word of God!

## **ADDENDUM 1**

### **Very important truths revealed in the book of Romans:**

There are many vital truths revealed in Romans regarding the gospel, God's revelation to man, man's descent into reprobation, the law of God, God's judgment, justification by faith, righteousness, and the Spirit of God. Below is a list of much of the things that Romans has to say about these very important topics:

- A. Truths about the Gospel:
  - 1. It was promised beforehand by the prophets in the Old Testament. (1:2)
  - 2. It is all about Jesus Christ the Son of God, and our Lord. (1:3)
    - a. He was made of the seed of David according to the flesh. (1:3)
    - b. He was declared to be the Son of God with power! (1:4)
      - i. According to the spirit or holiness.
      - ii. By the resurrection from the dead.
  - 3. It is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believes: (1:16)
    - a. To the Jew first;
    - b. And also to the Greek (Gentile).
  - 4. The righteousness of God is revealed in it (the gospel). (1:17)
    - a. From faith to faith.
    - b. It is given to all them that believe. (3:22)
  - 5. It brings free justification to sinners: (3:24)
    - a. By God's grace.
    - b. Through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus.
    - c. By believing in Jesus. (3:26)
    - d. By believing in the Father who raised Jesus from the dead. (4:24)
    - e. Because Jesus was delivered for our offences. (4:25)
    - f. And because he was raised again for our justification. (4:25)
  - 6. It is the word of faith that if you: (10:8-9)
    - a. Confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus, and...
    - b. Believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead,
      - ➡ You shall be saved.
  - 7. It is the gospel of peace that: (10:8-15)
    - a. God sent the apostles to preach;
    - b. God has sent other preachers throughout the earth to preach;
      - ➡ So that whoever believes this gospel and calls upon the name of the Lord Jesus shall be saved.
  - 8. The Jews are the enemies of it. (11:28)
  - 9. Through ministering it the Gentiles can become an acceptable offering to be offered up to God. (15:16)
  - 10. It was confirmed by MIGHTY signs & wonders by the power of the Spirit of God. (15:19)

11. Paul strived to preach it where Christ had not been named. (15:20)
  12. It helps establish the believers in Christ. (16:25)
- B. Truths about God's Revelation to man:
1. His righteousness is revealed in the gospel to those who believe. (1:17)
  2. His wrath and power are revealed from heaven against ALL ungodliness and unrighteousness of men (who hold the truth in unrighteousness). (1:18; 9:17,22)
  3. His general knowledge is manifested in all people; for God has showed these things unto them. (1:19)
  4. His eternal power & Godhead are clearly seen by ALL people and are understood by the things that he made (his creation). (1:20)
  5. The moral law of God is written in all men's hearts and our conscience bears witness to it. (2:14-15)
  6. Sin is revealed through God's law in order to shut all men's mouths and bring the entire world to guilt before God. (3:19-20)
  7. The love of God is revealed in the believer's hearts by the Holy Ghost. (5:5)
  8. His gospel and faith are sent to all people through preachers preaching the word of God. (10:8-18)
- C. Truths about man's descent into reprobation:
1. Ground Level: Knowing God
    - a. Descent: All mankind once knew God but because they:
      - i. Did not GLORIFY him as God;
      - ii. Became unthankful (to him);
    - b. Result:
      - i. They became vain in their imaginations;
      - ii. Their foolish hearts were darkened;
  2. Level -1: Darkened hearts
    - a. Further Descent: With darkened hearts, pride & error followed:
      - i. They professed themselves to be "wise" but they actually became fools.
      - ii. They changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, birds, beasts, creeping things, etc... (became idolaters after their own imaginations).
    - b. Result: God gave them up to uncleanness to dishonor their own bodies between themselves.
  3. Level -2: Unclean Idolaters
    - a. Further Descent: With God giving them up to uncleanness they:
      - i. Dishonoured their own bodies between themselves through the lusts of their own hearts. (fornication, adultery, uncleanness)
      - ii. Changed the truth of God into a lie; and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator. (man-centered worship, religion, philosophy, etc...)
    - b. Result: God gave them up to vile affections.
  4. Level -3: Vile Perverts

- a. Further Descent: With God giving them up to vile affections:
    - i. The women changed the natural use into that which is against nature.
    - ii. The men left the natural use of the woman and burned in their lust toward one another; men with men (unseemly);
    - iii. They did not like to retain God in their knowledge (they pushed God out of their mind and consciousness).
  - b. Result: God gave them over to a reprobate mind to do those things which are not convenient.
5. Level -4: Hardened "Atheist" Sinners
- a. Manifestation: They are:
    - i. Filled with ALL unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness, full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity;
    - ii. Whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, spiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, without understanding, covenant breakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful;
  - b. Reprobation: They know the judgment of God and that those who commit such things are worthy of death; and yet they do these things AND have pleasure in others that do these things as well.

D. Truths about the Law:

1. Those who have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law. (2:12)
2. The doers of the law (not the hearers) shall be justified. (2:13)
3. Sometimes the Gentiles (who don't have the law) do by nature the things that are in the law. (2:14)
4. The law is written in all men's hearts and our conscience bears witness to it. (2:15)
5. Circumcision only profits you if you keep the law; but if you break the law, circumcision is counted as uncircumcision. (2:25-27)
6. The law speaks to stop every mouth and make the whole world guilty before God. (3:19)
7. No flesh can be justified by the deeds of the law in the sight of God. (3:20)
8. The law brings the knowledge of sin. (3:20)
9. The law witnesses to the righteousness of God which is by faith which is without the law. (3:21-22)
10. We establish the law by faith. (3:31)
11. The law works wrath and reveals transgressions. (4:15)
12. The law brings the imputation (reckoning & charging) of sin. (5:13)
13. The law was given so that the offence (of sin) might abound. (5:20)
14. Sin has dominion over man under the law. (6:14)
15. We become dead to the law by the body of Jesus Christ. (7:4)
16. The law is not sin (or sinful). (7:7)
17. Sin takes occasion and comes to life by the law. (7:8-9)
18. The law/commandment is ordained to life but brings men to death. (7:10)
19. The law is holy, just, and good. (7:12)

20. The law causes sin to become exceeding sinful (magnifies it). (7:13)
21. The law is spiritual. (7:14)
22. \*The law of sin & death works in our members to bring us captive. (7:23)
23. \*The law of the Spirit of life makes us free from the law of sin & death. (8:2)
24. The law is weak through the flesh and cannot free or justify us. (8:3)
25. The righteousness of the law is fulfilled in us by walking after the Spirit. (8:4)
26. The carnal mind is not subject to the law. (8:7)
27. The law was given to Israel. (9:4)
28. Israel followed after the law of righteousness and did not attain to it because they did not seek it by faith (but by the works of the law). (9:31-32)
29. Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believes. (10:4)
30. The righteousness of the law is that the man which does those things shall live by them. (10:5)
31. To love one another (love your neighbor as yourself) is to fulfill the law. (13:8-10)
  - \* These "laws" are not the law of God, but they are different "laws" that he has put in place in the spiritual realm.

E. Truths about the judgment of God:

1. People living in filthy, vile sin know his judgment. (1:29-32)
2. God's judgment is according to truth against people that do such vile things. (2:2)
3. Those who judge others but do the same things will not escape God's judgment. (2:3)
4. His judgment is righteous and will be revealed in the day of wrath. (2:5)
5. God will grant eternal life to all those who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory, honour, and immortality. (2:7)
6. God will bring tribulation and anguish upon every soul of man that is contentious, does not obey the truth, but instead obeys unrighteousness and does evil. (2:8-9)
7. God will judge those who have the law by the law. (2:12)
8. God will judge the secrets of men in the last day by Jesus Christ. (2:16)
9. God shall judge the world. (3:6)
10. There is no condemnation to those who are in Christ and walk after the Spirit. (8:1)
11. Our sin was condemned in the flesh of Jesus Christ. (8:3)
12. His judgments are unsearchable. (11:33)
13. We (believers) shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ and be judged by him. (14:10)
14. We are not to judge one another, but rather to be sure to not cause our brothers & sisters to stumble. (14:13)

F. Truths about justification by faith and righteousness:

1. The righteousness of God is revealed in the gospel. (1:17)
2. The just live by faith. (1:17)
3. The doers of the law shall be justified (but not by their deeds of the law, by faith in Christ ultimately...). (2:13 w/ 3:21-28)



4. The righteousness of God is given only by faith: (3:22)
  - a. Of Jesus Christ,
  - b. Unto all,
  - c. Upon all that believe.
5. We are justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus. (3:24)
6. This declares his righteousness so that he might be: (3:26)
  - a. Just;
  - b. And the justifier of those that believe in Jesus.
7. Men are justified by faith without the deeds of the law. (3:28)
8. Abraham was justified by faith (believing God): (4:2-3)
  - a. When he was still uncircumcised. (4:10-12)
  - b. He did not consider his body nor Sarah's body (their human inabilities; (4:19)
  - c. He did not stagger at the promise of God (through unbelief); (4:20)
  - d. He was strong in faith giving glory to God; (4:20)
  - e. He was fully persuaded that what God promised he was able to perform; (4:21)
  - f. This is why God imputed righteousness to him. (4:22)
9. Our faith is counted for righteousness. (4:5)
10. The promise to Abraham and his seed to be the heir of the world was not through the law, but through the righteousness of faith: (4:13)
  - a. That it might be by grace; (4:16)
  - b. That it might be sure to all the seed (not those under the law only). (4:16)
11. We shall be imputed righteousness if we believe on the God who raised up our Lord Jesus from the dead; (4:24)
  - a. Christ was delivered for our offences; (4:25)
  - b. And was raised again (from the dead) for our justification.
12. Being justified by faith is the only way we can have peace with God. (5:1)
13. We are justified by Christ's blood. (5:9)
14. This justification:
  - a. Is from one man (Jesus Christ) unto MANY people; (5:15)
  - b. Covers many offences; (5:16)
  - c. Causes us to reign in life by Jesus Christ; (5:17)
  - d. Is brought to all men by receiving the free gift from the righteousness of Christ. (5:18)
15. By Christ's obedience many are made righteous. (5:19)
16. Grace reigns through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord. (5:21)
17. Once we are dead with Christ unto sin, we are:
  - a. Free from sin, and become the servants of righteousness; (6:11,17)
  - b. To yield our members as instruments of righteousness with our fruit unto holiness; (5:13,19,22)

18. The Spirit of Christ is LIFE to us because of righteousness. (8:10)
19. Whoever God foreknows he predestinates, and whoever he predestinates he calls, and whoever he calls he justifies, and whoever he justifies he will glorify. (8:29-30)
20. The Lord will finish his work with Israel and cut it short in righteousness. (9:28)
21. The Gentiles who did not seek after righteousness have attained to the righteousness of faith (through Jesus Christ). (9:30)
22. We are imputed righteousness and saved by believing the word of faith with our hearts (that Jesus rose from the dead) and confessing the Lord Jesus Christ with our mouth. (10:8-13)
  - \* With the heart (believing that God raised Christ from the dead) we believe unto righteousness. (10:10)
23. The kingdom of God is righteousness (& peace, & joy) in the Holy Ghost. (14:17)

G. Truths about Jesus Christ:

1. He is the Son of God and our Lord. (1:3)
2. He was made of the seed of David (according to the flesh). (1:3)
3. He was declared to be the Son of God with power (according to the spirit of holiness). (1:4)
4. His gospel is the power of God unto salvation. (1:16)
5. God shall judge men's secrets by him. (2:16)
6. The righteousness of God is of (from) HIM. (3:22)
7. Our redemption is in HIM. (3:24)
8. He has been set forth to be a propitiation (through faith in his blood). (3:25)
9. Believing in HIM brings justification. (3:26)
10. We have peace with God through HIM. (5:1)
11. He died for the ungodly & sinners. (5:6,8)
12. His blood justifies us and his death reconciles us to God. (5:9-10)
13. We shall be saved by wrath through his life. (5:9-10)
14. We have received the atonement through him. (5:11)
15. God's grace and the gift of righteousness are given to many by him. (5:15)
16. Through his righteousness the free gift of righteousness came upon all men to justification of life. (5:18)
17. Grace reigns over us through righteousness unto eternal life by HIM. (3:21)
18. We are baptized into him and his death. (6:3)
19. The gift of God is eternal life through him. (6:23)
20. We become dead to the law by his body (his death). (7:4)
21. We are to be married to the resurrected Jesus. (7:4)
22. He was not spared by God but delivered up for us all (to death). (8:32)
23. He is at the right hand of God making intercession for us. (8:34)
24. Nothing or no one will separate us from his love. (8:35-39)
25. He is the stumbling stone and rock of offence laid in Sion. (9:33)
26. He is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believes. (10:4)

27. Those that confess him as Lord and believe in his resurrection shall be saved: (10:9-13)
  - a. Those who believe on him shall not be ashamed.
  - b. Those that call upon his name shall be saved.
28. Whatever we do, we do it unto him. (14:6-8)
29. We will all stand before his judgment seat. (14:10)
30. He did not please himself. (15:3)
31. He was a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God to confirm the promises made to the fathers. (15:8)

H. Truths about the Spirit of God:

1. The love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost. (5:5)
2. There is no condemnation to those walk after the Spirit. (8:1)
3. The law of the Spirit of life makes us free from the law of sin & death. (8:2)
4. The righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us who walk after the Spirit. (8:4)
5. Those who walk after the Spirit mind the things of the Spirit. (8:5)
6. We are in the Spirit if the Spirit of God dwells in us. (8:9)
7. If we do not have the Spirit of Christ, we are none of his (we don't belong to Christ). (8:9)
8. The Spirit is life because of righteousness. (8:10)
9. If the Spirit of Christ dwells in us, God will quicken our mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwells in us. (8:11)
10. If we mortify the deeds of the body through the Spirit, we shall live. (8:13)
11. The sons of God are led by the Spirit of God. (8:14)
12. He is called the "Spirit of adoption" and by him we cry "Abba, Father" (we truly become his sons crying out for him...). (8:15)
13. The Spirit bears witness with our spirit that we are the children of God. (8:16)
14. Those of us who have the (firstfruits of the) Spirit groan within ourselves waiting for the redemption of our body (the adoption). (8:23)
15. The Spirit helps our infirmities by making intercession for us according to the will of God (with groanings that cannot be uttered). (8:26-27)
16. Our conscience can only bear witness in the Holy Ghost if we speak the truth in Christ (don't lie). (9:1)
17. The kingdom of God is righteousness, joy, and peace IN the Holy Ghost. (14:17)
18. We can abound in hope through the power of the Holy Ghost. (15:13)
19. In order for the Gentiles to be offered up to God as acceptable, we must be sanctified by the Holy Ghost. (15:16)
20. Mighty signs & wonders of God were done through Paul by the power of the Spirit of God. (15:19)

I. Truths about Israel & the Jews:

1. The gospel went to them first. (1:16)
2. They will receive greater judgment/damnation OR greater reward. (2:5-11)
3. The "Jews" think they are resting in the law and boast in God. (2:17)

4. A true Jew is not one outwardly (circumcised in the flesh, who receives praise from men); but a true Jew is one inwardly (circumcised in the heart & spirit, whose praise is from God). (2:28-29)
5. The Jews had major advantages over the Gentiles; the chief advantage being that they were given the oracles of God (spoken and written word). (3:1-2)
6. Jews are under sin just as much as the Gentiles. (3:9)
7. God is not the God of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles. (3:29)
8. The Jews must be justified by faith. (3:30)
9. Paul had great heaviness and continual sorrow for his lost Israeli brothers. (9:1-4)
10. Israel was given: (9:4)
  - a. The adoption;
  - b. The glory;
  - c. The covenants;
  - d. The law;
  - e. The service of God;
  - f. The promises.
11. Israel has the fathers (Abraham, Isaac, & Jacob). (9:5)
12. Through Israel Christ came (physically speaking). (9:5)
13. They are not all (spiritual) Israel, which are of (physical) Israel. (9:6)
  - a. Though the number of (physical) Israel be as the sand of the sea, yet a remnant shall be saved. (9:27)
14. Israel which followed after the law of righteousness did not attain to the law of righteousness, because: (9:31-33)
  - a. They sought it after the works of the law;
  - b. They did not seek it by faith;
  - c. They stumbled at the stumbling stone (Jesus) that God laid in Sion.
15. Natural Israel has a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge: (10:1-3)
  - a. They are ignorant of God's righteousness and are going about to establish their own righteousness;
  - b. They have not submitted themselves to the righteousness of God.
16. Israel will be provoked to jealousy and angered by the true church of Jesus Christ (mostly Gentiles that believe in Jesus). (10:19)
17. Israel is a disobedient gainsaying people that God has reached out to continually. (10:21)
18. God has not cast away Israel but:
  - a. Most of them have been blinded (until the fulness of the Gentiles);
  - b. They have stumbled and fallen; (through their fall salvation has come to the Gentiles);
  - c. They have been temporarily cast away (so that the world might be reconciled to God);
  - d. Some of the branches have been broken off due to unbelief;
  - e. Once the fulness of the Gentiles is come in, then ALL Israel shall be saved;
  - f. Through the mercy of the believers, they can obtain mercy;

## **ADDENDUM 2**

### **Very important truths revealed in the book of Hebrews:**

There are many wonderful truths about Jesus Christ and the new covenant, along with important warnings and admonitions for those who would follow Jesus Christ, and blessed examples of men and women who walked by faith with God before us. Below I have attempted to list all that is revealed in Hebrews regarding these important topics:

- A. Truths about Jesus Christ:
  - 1. Has spoken for God in these last days. (1:2)
  - 2. He is the heir of all things. (1:2)
  - 3. God used him to make the worlds. (1:2)
  - 4. He is:
    - a. The brightness of God's glory. (1:3)
    - b. The express image of the person of God. (1:3)
  - 5. He upholds all things by the word of his power. (1:3)
  - 6. He purged our sins by himself. (1:3)
  - 7. He sat down on the right hand of the Majesty (God) on high. (1:3)
  - 8. He is so much better than the angels:
    - a. He has obtained a more excellent name. (1:4)
    - b. He is the begotten Son of the Father. (1:5)
    - c. All the angels of God worship him. (1:6)
    - d. His throne is for ever and ever. (1:8)
      - i. He is called "God". (1:8) (while the angels are just ministers)
  - 9. He loves righteousness and hates iniquity. (1:9)
  - 10. He was anointed by God with the oil of gladness above all his fellows. (1:9)
  - 11. In the beginning he:
    - a. Laid the foundation of the earth. (1:10)
    - b. Made the heavens by his hands. (1:10)
  - 12. He will fold up the heavens one day. (1:12)
  - 13. He remains the same and will never fail (perish). (1:12)
  - 14. He has spoken so great a salvation. (2:3)
  - 15. He was made a little lower than the angels:
    - a. For the suffering of death. (2:9)
    - b. So that he should taste death for every man. (2:9)
  - 16. He is crowned with glory and honour. (2:9)
  - 17. All things are BY him and FOR him. (2:10)
  - 18. He is bringing MANY sons to glory. (2:10)
  - 19. He is the captain of our salvation. (2:10)
  - 20. He was made perfect through sufferings. (2:10)
  - 21. He is one with those whom he saves. (2:11)
  - 22. He is not ashamed to call his people brethren. (2:11)
  - 23. He declared the name of the Father to his brethren. (2:12)

24. He sang praises to the Father in the midst of the church. (2:12)
25. He destroyed the devil: (2:14)
  - a. The one that had the power of death.
  - b. Through death he destroyed him.
26. He can deliver those who are subject to bondage through the fear of death. (2:15)
27. He took on him the seed of Abraham. (2:16)
28. He is a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God:
  - a. He made reconciliation for the sins of the people. (2:17)
  - b. He suffered being tempted. (2:18)
  - c. He can succour (rush in to help) those that are tempted. (2:18)
29. He is the Apostle and High Priest of the New Covenant. (3:1)
  - a. He was faithful to the Father who appointed him. (3:2)
  - b. He is the Son over his own house. (3:6)
  - c. He is a great high priest passed into the heavens. (4:14)
  - d. He is touched with the feelings of our infirmities. (4:15)
  - e. He was tempted in all points like us, yet without sin. (4:15)
  - f. He is a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec. (5:6)
30. He offered up prayers and supplications to God:
  - a. With strong crying and tears. (5:7)
  - b. He was heard in that he feared God. (5:7)
31. He learned obedience by his sufferings. (5:8)
32. He is the author of eternal salvation to all that obey him. (5:9)
33. He is our forerunner entered into the most holy place of heaven behind the veil for us. (6:20)
34. He sprang out of the tribe of Judah. (7:14)
35. He was made a high priest:
  - a. after the power of endless life. (7:15)
  - b. with an oath. (7:21)
  - c. as surety of a better testament. (7:22)
  - d. with an unchangeable priesthood. (7:24)
  - e. in order to save those to the uttermost that come to God by him. (7:25)
  - f. to ever live to make intercession for those who come to God by him. (7:25)
  - g. and became flesh and blood like us. (7:26)
  - h. being holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and higher than the heavens. (7:26)
  - i. who offered up himself (once). (7:27)
  - j. who is consecrated for evermore. (7:28)
  - k. who is a minister of the sanctuary (the true tabernacle which the Lord pitched). (8:2)
  - l. of good things to come. (9:11)
  - m. that entered into the holy place by his own blood. (9:12)
  - n. that obtained eternal redemption for us (by his blood). (9:12)
  - o. He offered himself without spot to God through the eternal Spirit. (9:14)
  - p. as the mediator of the new testament. (9:15)

- q. so that by his death:
  - i. The transgressions under the first testament could be pardoned. (9:15)
  - ii. Those who are called could receive the promise of eternal inheritance. (9:15)
- r. to enter into heaven itself to appear in the presence of God for us. (9:24)
- s. to appear in the world to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself once for all. (9:26)
- t. to be once offered to bear the sins of many. (9:28)
- u. to appear the second time (without sin) to save those who look for him. (9:28)
- 36. He was prepared a body by God to come into the world: (10:5)
  - a. To fulfill all that was written in the book (Bible) regarding him. (10:7)
  - b. To do the will of God. (10:7)
  - c. To take away the first covenant. (10:9)
  - d. To establish the second covenant. (10:9)
  - e. To offer up his body once for all: (10:10)
    - i. So that we might be sanctified by this second covenant. (10:10)
    - ii. So that those who are sanctified might be perfected for ever. (10:14)
  - f. To open up the new and living way into the holiest: (10:19-20)
    - i. By his blood. (10:19)
    - ii. through the tearing of his flesh (the veil). (10:20)
- 37. Vengeance belongs to HIM; he will repay. (10:30)
- 38. He will judge his people. (10:30)
- 39. He is the author and finisher of our faith. (12:2)
- 40. For the joy that was set before him, he:
  - a. Endured the cross. (12:2)
  - b. Despised the shame. (12:2)
  - c. Is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. (12:2)
  - d. Endured such contradiction of sinners against himself. (12:3)
  - e. Stroved against sin resisting unto blood. (12:4)
- 41. He will never leave us nor forsake us. (13:5)
- 42. He is our helper so that we may not fear what man can do to us. (13:6)
- 43. He is the same: yesterday, today, and for ever. (13:8)
- 44. He suffered outside of the gate (not within the camp):
  - a. In order to sanctify us with his own blood. (13:12)
  - b. Bearing reproach. (13:13)
- 45. He allows us to offer the sacrifice of praise to God. (13:15)
- 46. He was raised from the dead by the God of peace. (13:20)
- 47. He is the great shepherd of the sheep. (13:20)
- 48. Through him we can be made perfect to do his will. (13:21)
- B. Truths about the New Covenant:
  - 1. It was spoken by the Son (the Lord). (1:2; 2:1-3)
  - 2. It was confirmed by the apostles who heard Jesus. (2:3)
  - 3. It was confirmed by God through: (3:4)

- a. Signs & wonders.
  - b. Divers (different types of) miracles.
  - c. Gifts of the Holy Ghost.
- 4. It makes Jesus and us (those sanctified) all of one. (2:11)
- 5. It is a heavenly calling. (3:1)
- 6. We are the house of Christ (if we hold fast firm unto the end). (3:6)
- 7. Those who believe the gospel enter into rest. (4:3)
- 8. The word of God is: (4:12)
  - a. quick
  - b. powerful
  - c. sharper than any two-edged sword piercing to the dividing asunder of:
    - i. soul & spirit.
    - ii. joints & marrow.
  - d. a discernor of the thoughts & intents of the heart.
- 9. Allows us to come boldly to the throne of grace for: (4:16)
  - a. Mercy,
  - b. Grace to help in time of need.
- 10. Christ is the high priest of this new covenant:
  - a. Called by God. (5:4-5,10)
  - b. After the order of Melchisedec. (5:6,10)
- 11. The principles of the doctrine of Christ (the basics of this new covenant): (6:1-2)
  - a. Foundation: Repentance from dead works.
  - b. Foundation: Faith towards God.
  - c. The doctrine of baptisms.
  - d. The doctrine of laying on of hands.
  - e. The doctrine of the resurrection of the dead.
  - f. The doctrine of eternal judgment.
- 12. Is established by 2 immutable things: (6:17-18)
  - a. God made a promise (Psalm 2:7)
  - b. and confirmed it by an oath (Psalm 110:4)
- 13. Allows us to lay hold of a heavenly hope that is an anchor for our soul. (6:18-19)
- 14. There is a change of the priesthood (from Levi/Aaron to a new order like Melchisedec). (7:12)
- 15. There had to be a change of the law (from the old to the new). (7:12)
- 16. It brings us a better hope which allows us to draw nigh to God. (7:19)
- 17. Jesus is the surety of this better testament with an unchangeable priesthood because he lives for ever. (7:22-24)
- 18. This covenant is established upon BETTER promises. (8:6)
- 19. It was needed because there was fault with the first covenant (because of the disobedience of the people of Israel, not God's law). (8:7-9)
- 20. These were promises of the NEW covenant made by God in the OT:
  - a. Would be with the house of Israel. (8:10)
  - b. He would put his laws into their mind. (8:10)
  - c. He would write his laws in their hearts. (8:10)



- d. He would be their God. (8:10)
  - e. They would be his people. (8:10)
  - f. They will no longer have to teach each other to know the Lord; but they will ALL KNOW the Lord (from the least to the greatest). (8:10)
  - g. He will be merciful to their unrighteousness. (8:11)
  - h. Their sins and their iniquities will he remember no more. (8:11)
21. All the articles, services, sacrifices, offerings, and ordinances of the old covenant were figures (shadows and types) of the new covenant to come. (9:1-10; 10:1)
  22. It came about at "the time of reformation." (9:10)
  23. The tabernacle of the new covenant:
    - a. is the one in heaven pitched by the Lord. (8:2; 9:11)
    - b. The holy places are heaven itself. (9:24)
    - c. The most holy place is the throne room of God (his very presence). (9:24; 10:12,19-22)
  24. The blood of the new covenant:
    - a. Is the blood of Christ himself. (9:12)
    - b. Can purge our conscience from dead works to serve the living God. (9:14)
    - c. Purified the heavenly things. (9:23)
    - d. Gives us boldness to enter into the holiest (the most holy place of heaven in the presence of God). (10:19)
    - e. Sprinkles our hearts from an evil conscience. (10:22)
    - f. Can make us perfect in every good work to do God's will. (13:20-21)
  25. The sacrifice of the new covenant:
    - a. Jesus Christ himself. (9:26)
    - b. Puts away SIN. (9:26)
    - c. The body of Jesus Christ. (10:5)
    - d. Offered himself up once for all. (10:10)
    - e. Sanctifies us. (10:10)
    - f. Is the one (and only) sacrifice for sins for ever. (10:12)
    - g. Perfects those who are sanctified. (10:14)
    - h. Gives complete remission of sins. (10:18)
    - i. Opened up the new and living way into God's presence. (10:20)
  26. It's redemption is eternal. (9:12)
  27. It brings about redemption for the transgressions from under the first (old) testament. (9:15)
  28. The testament became of force at Christ's death. (9:17)
  29. It allows us to draw near to God with a true heart in full assurance of faith. (10:22)
  30. Those who disregard this covenant and count it unworthy shall receive much sorer punishment than those who despised Moses' law. (10:29)
  31. It is a call from God in heaven to: (10:22-25)
    - a. Mount Zion
    - b. The city of the living God (the heavenly Jerusalem)
    - c. An innumerable company of angels.
    - d. The general assembly and church of the firstborn.

- e. God the Judge of all.
  - f. The spirits of just men made perfect.
  - g. Jesus, the mediator of the new covenant.
  - h. The blood of sprinkling (that speaks better things than Abel's blood).
32. God's voice will shake both heaven and earth. (10:25-26)
  33. It brings the kingdom of God (which cannot be moved) to men. (10:28)
  34. The altar of the new covenant:
    - a. Is completely outside of OT Judaism (the law). (13:10)
    - b. Is without the camp of OT Israel. (13:10-13)
    - c. Is a reproach to formalized religion. (13:12-13)
    - d. Allows us to offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually (the sacrifice of our lips, giving thanks to his name). (13:15)
    - e. Doing good and communicating are well pleasing sacrifices to God. (13:16)
  35. It is an everlasting covenant. (13:20)

C. Warnings & Exhortations to Followers of Jesus:

1. Therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard (lest at any time we should let them slip)! (2:1)
2. How shall we escape if we neglect so great salvation! (2:3)
3. Wherefore holy brethren, consider the Apostle and High Priest of our profession: Christ Jesus. (3:1)
4. Today, if ye will hear his voice: Harden not your hearts. (3:7,15)
5. Take heed, brethren (lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God). (3:12)
6. Exhort one another daily (while it is called today, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin). (3:13)
7. Let us therefore fear (lest a promise being left us of entering into his rest, any of you should seem to come short of it). (4:1)
8. Let us labour therefore to enter into that rest (lest any man fall after the same example of unbelief). (4:11)
9. Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace: (4:16)
  - a. That we may obtain mercy,
  - b. And find grace to help in time of need.
10. Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection (not laying again the foundation...). (6:1)
11. Be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises. (6:12)
12. Now consider how great this man was! (referring to Melchisedec) (7:4)
13. Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest... let us draw near (with a true heart in full assurance of faith). (10:19-22)
14. Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering. (10:23)
15. Let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works:
  - a. not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together,
  - b. but exhorting one another. (10:24-25)

16. For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth: (10:26-27)
  - a. There remaineth no more sacrifice for sins
  - b. But a certain fearful looking for of judgment & fiery indignation
17. He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under 2 or 3 witnesses:
  - a. Of how much sorer punishment shall he be worthy of who hath:
    - i. Trodden under the foot the Son of God,
    - ii. Counted the blood of the covenant (wherewith he was sanctified) an unholy thing,
    - iii. Done despite unto the Spirit of grace.
  - b. It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God. (10:28-31)
18. Cast not away therefore your confidence (which hath great recompense of reward). (10:35)
19. For ye have need of patience (that after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise). (10:36)
20. Let us lay aside every weight and the sin which doth so easily beset us. (12:1)
21. Let us run with patience the race that is set before us: (12:2-3)
  - a. Looking unto Jesus (the author & finisher of our faith).
  - b. For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself.
22. My son, despise not the chastening of the Lord (nor faint when thou art rebuked of him). (12:5)
23. Wherefore: (12:12-13)
  - a. Lift up the hands which hang down,
  - b. Lift up the feeble knees,
  - c. Make straight paths for your feet (lest that which is lame be turned out of the way),
  - d. Let that which is lame be healed.
24. Follow peace with ALL men and holiness (without which no man shall see the Lord). (12:14)
25. See that ye refuse not him that speaketh (from heaven). (12:25)
26. Wherefore, we receiving a kingdom, let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear. (12:28)
27. Let brotherly love continue. (13:1)
28. Be not forgetful to entertain strangers. (13:2)
29. Remember them that are in bonds. (13:3)
30. Whoremongers and adulterers God will judge. (13:4)
31. Let your conversation be without covetousness. (13:5)
32. Be content with such things as ye have. (13:5)
33. Remember them that have the rule over you: (13:7)
  - a. Who have spoken unto you the word of God,
  - b. Whose faith follow.
34. Be not carried about with divers and strange doctrines. (13:9)
35. Let us go forth unto Jesus without the camp, bearing his reproach. (13:13)

36. Let us offer the sacrifices of praise to God by Christ (the fruit of our lips giving thanks to his name). (13:15)
37. Do not forget to: (13:16)
  - a. Do good,
  - b. And communicate.
38. Obey them that have the rule over you and submit yourselves. (13:17)
39. Pray for us. (13:18)

D. By Faith:

1. The elders obtained a good report. (11:2)
2. \*We understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God. (11:3)
3. Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain (by which he obtained witness that he was righteous). (11:4)
4. Enoch was translated that he should not see death (for he had the testimony that he pleased God). (11:5)
5. Noah was warned of God of things not seen yet, moved with fear and prepared an ark to the saving of his house (and became heir of the righteousness by faith). (11:7)
6. Abraham:
  - a. Obeyed God and went to a place not knowing where he went when God called him. (11:8)
  - b. Sojourned in the land of promise. (11:9)
  - c. Offered up Isaac, his only begotten son (when he was tried; accounting that God was able to raise him from the dead). (11:17-19)
7. \*Sara received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child (past age, because she judged him faithful who had promised). (11:11)
8. Isaac blessed Jacob & Esau concerning things to come. (11:20)
9. Jacob blessed both the sons of Joseph, and worshipped. (11:21)
10. Joseph (before he died) made mention of the departing of the children of Israel, and gave commandment concerning his bones. (11:22)
11. Moses:
  - a. Refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter (when he was come to age): (11:24)
    - i. Choosing to suffer affliction with the people of God rather than enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season. (11:25)
    - ii. Esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt (for he had respect unto the recompense of the reward). (11:26)
  - b. Forsook Egypt: (11:27)
    - i. Not fearing the wrath of the king;
    - ii. He endured (as seeing him who is invisible).
  - c. \*Kept the passover and the sprinkling of blood (lest he that destroyed the firstborn should touch them). (11:28)
12. Moses & Israel passed through the Red Sea on dry land (which the Egyptians attempted to do and were drowned). (11:29)

13. The walls of Jericho fell down (after being compassed about 7 days). (11:30)
14. Rahab the harlot perished not with her city (those who did not believe; because she received the spies with peace). (11:31)
15. \*Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthah, David, Samuel, and the prophets: (11:32-34)
  - a. Subdued kingdoms,
  - b. Wrought (worked) righteousness,
  - c. Obtained promises,
  - d. Stopped the mouths of lions,
  - e. Quenched the violence of fire,
  - f. Escaped the edge of the sword,
  - g. Out of weakness were made strong,
  - h. Waxed valiant in fight,
  - i. Turned to flight the armies of the aliens,
16. Women received their dead raised to life again. (11:35)
17. Others were tortured (not accepting deliverance that they might obtain a better resurrection). (11:35)
18. Others:
  - a. Had trials of cruel mocking & scourgings, and bonds & imprisonment. (11:36)
  - b. Were stoned,
  - c. Were sawn asunder,
  - d. Were tempted,
  - e. Were slain with the sword,
  - f. Wandered about in sheepskins & goatskins
    - i. being destitute, afflicted, tormented,
    - ii. Of whom the world was not worthy,
    - iii. They wandered in: deserts, mountains, & caves.
19. \*These all obtained a good report.

\* All of the starred ones are “through” faith instead of “by” faith.

## **ADDENDUM 3**

### **Some Key 7's in Revelation with a General Overview of the book:**

- A. The 7 stars = the 7 angels of the 7 churches
- B. The 7 churches (7 golden candlesticks) (Chapters 2-3):
  - 1. Ephesus (2:1-7):
    - a. Jesus' Introduction, "These things saith...": He that holds the 7 stars in his right hand, and who walks in the midst of the 7 golden candlesticks.
    - b. Commendation: "I know...": Their works, labour, patience, how they can't bear with evil people; they've tried the false apostles and found them liars; they hate the deeds of the Nicolaitans (which Jesus also hates).
    - c. Rebuke: They have left their first love.
    - d. Remedy: Remember from where they have fallen; repent; and do the first works.
    - e. Danger: I will come to you quickly and remove the candlestick out of its place unless you repent.
    - f. Promise for Overcomers: Christ will give them to eat from the tree of life (which is in the midst of the paradise of God).
  - 2. Smyrna (2:8-11):
    - a. Jesus' Introduction, "These things saith...": The first & the last, which was dead, and is alive.
    - b. Commendation: "I know...": Their works, tribulation, and poverty (but they are spiritually rich), the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews but are really of the synagogue of Satan.
    - c. Exhortation & Preparation: To fear none of the things that they will suffer; the devil will cast some of them into prison (to be tried/tested); they must be faithful unto death, and Christ will give them a crown of life.
    - d. Promise for Overcomers: They shall not be hurt of the 2nd death.
  - 3. Pergamos (2:12-17):
    - a. Jesus' Introduction, "These things saith...": He which hath a sharp sword with 2 edges.
    - b. Commendation: "I know...": Their works, where they dwell (which is where Satan's seat is), they hold fast Christ's name, and have not denied his faith (even when Antipas, Christ's faithful martyr was slain among them).
    - c. Rebuke: They have people there that hold the doctrine of Balaam (who taught Balak to cast a stumblingblock before Israel to eat things sacrificed to idols and to commit fornication); and they have people there that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans (which Jesus hates).
    - d. Remedy: Repent.
    - e. Danger: I will come to you quickly and fight against them (the people who hold these false doctrines) with the sword of my mouth.

- f. Promise for Overcomers: Christ will give them to eat of the hidden manna, and he will give them a white stone with a new name written inside which nobody else knows.
- 4. Thyatira (2:18-29):
  - a. Jesus' Introduction, "These things saith...": The Son of God, whose eyes are like a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brass.
  - b. Commendation: "I know...": Their works, charity, service, faith, patience, and works (the last more than the first).
  - c. Rebuke: They suffer (allow) the false prophetess Jezebel to teach and seduce Christ's servants to commit fornication and eat things sacrificed unto idols.
  - d. Judgment Pronounced: Jezebel had a season to repent, but she didn't, therefore she will be cast into a bed and cast into great tribulation. Christ will kill her children with death.
  - e. Danger: Those who commit adultery with her will also be judged with her unless they repent.
  - f. Christ's Judgment: All the churches will know that he searches the reins and hearts, and he gives to every one according to their works.
  - g. Admonition to rest: Must hold fast what they already have until Christ comes.
  - h. Promise for Overcomers (& those who keep Christ's works until the end): Christ will give them power over the nations, and they will rule with a rod of iron just like Christ received this power from his Father; and he will give them the morning star.
- 5. Sardis (3:1-6):
  - a. Jesus' Introduction, "These things saith...": He that hath the 7 Spirits of God, and the 7 stars.
  - b. Commendation: "I know...": Their works, and they have a name that they live; they have a few names there (people there), that have not defiled their garments, and they shall walk with Christ in white, for they are worthy.
  - c. Rebuke: They are dead, and the Lord has not found their works perfect before God.
  - d. Remedy/Admonition: Be watchful, and strengthen the things that remain that are ready to die; remember how you received and heard, and hold fast, and repent.
  - e. Danger: If they will not watch, Christ will come on them as a thief, and they will not know what hour he will come upon them.
  - f. Promise for Overcomers: They shall be clothed in white raiment; Christ will not blot their name out of the book of life, but Christ will confess their name before his Father and his angels.
- 6. Philadelphia (3:7-13):
  - a. Jesus' Introduction, "These things saith...": He that is holy, he that is true, he that has the key of David, and opens and no man shuts, and shuts and no man opens.

- b. Commendation: "I know...": Their works, they have a little strength, they have kept his word, and have not denied his name.
  - c. Promises: Those who are of the synagogue of Satan (they say they are Jews but they are liars) will come and worship Christ before the believers feet and know that Christ loves them; because they kept the word of Christ's patience, he will keep them from the hour of temptation that will come upon all the world to try them.
  - d. Promise for Overcomers: They will be made a pillar in the temple of Christ's God (the Father); they will no more go out, and Christ will write upon them the name of his God, the name of the city of his God (which is New Jerusalem), and his new name.
7. Laodiceans (3:14-22):
- a. Jesus' Introduction, "These things saith...": The Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God.
  - b. Assessment: "I know...": Their works, that they are neither cold nor hot; they are lukewarm.
  - c. Rebuke: He wishes they were either cold or hot, but because they are lukewarm, he will spue them out of his mouth.
  - d. Delusion: They say that they are rich and increased with goods and have need of nothing.
  - e. Reality: But they are actually wretched, miserable, poor, blind, and naked (and don't know it).
  - f. Counsel: They need to buy the following from Christ:
    - i. Gold tried in the fire (so that they may be rich).
    - ii. White raiment (so that they may be clothed and the shame of their nakedness does not appear).
    - iii. Eyesalve so that they might anoint their eyes and may see.
  - g. Admonition/Rebuke: Whoever Christ loves he rebukes and chastens; so they must be zealous and repent!
  - h. Offer: Christ stands at the door and knocks; if any man hears his voice and opens the door, Christ will come in and sup with him.
  - i. Promise for Overcomers: They shall be granted to sit with Christ in HIS throne, just like he overcame and sat down with his Father in his throne.
- \* All the churches are told, "He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches."

- C. There are 7 Proclamations in Heaven around the throne room of God (Chapters 4-5)
- This section looks at the One on the throne: the Lord God Almighty (the Father). He is the focus of chapter 4.
  - Then it looks at the Lamb standing in the midst of the throne (Jesus Christ, the Son) who is the only one who has the right to approach the One on the throne and take the book out of his right hand and loose the 7 seals on the book. He is the focus of chapter 5.



- These chapters also reveal how ALL worship, praise, honour, and glory goes to the One on the throne (the Father) and the Lamb at his right hand (the Son). We see 4 beasts, 24 elders with crowns (exalted leaders), strong angels, many angels, and all creatures; and all of their praise, proclamations, and worship goes to the Lord (Father) & the Lamb (Son):
  1. “Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.” - 4 beasts worshipping the Father (4:8).
  2. “Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.” - T h e 24 elders worshipping the Father (4:11).
  3. “Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof?” - A strong angel challenging heaven, earth, and hell (5:2).
  4. “Weep not, behold, the Lion of the tribe of Juda, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.” - One of the elders revealing the truth to John (5:5).
  5. “Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation; and hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth.” - The 4 beasts & the 24 elders worshipping the Lamb (5:9-10)!
  6. “Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.” - The 4 beasts, 24 elders, and many many angels worshipping the Lamb (5:12).
  7. “Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.” - All creatures in heaven, earth, hell, and the sea worshipping the Father & the Son (5:13)!
- D. The 7 seals are opened by the Lamb, Jesus Christ (Chapter 6 - 8:5) Releasing trials upon the earth:
  1. False Peace (6:1-2)
    - a. Announced by the 1st Beast (the lion-like seraph)
    - b. White Horse
    - c. The rider has a bow, and is given a crown, and goes forth conquering and to conquer.
  2. War (6:3-4)
    - a. Announced by the 2nd Beast (the calf-like seraph)
    - b. Red Horse
    - c. The rider was given power to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another, and he was given a great sword.
  3. Famine (6:5-6)
    - a. Announced by the 3rd Beast (the man-like seraph)
    - b. Black Horse
    - c. The rider has a pair of balances in his hand.

- d. God speaks and says: "A measure of wheat for a penny, and 3 measures of barley for a penny; and see thou hurt not the oil and the wine." (costly for a small amount of food; but oil & wine unaffected).
- 4. Death & Hell (6:7-8)
  - a. Announced by the 4th Beast (the eagle-like seraph)
  - b. Pale Horse (with another behind him)
  - c. The rider's name is Death; and Hell follows after him; power is given unto them over the 4th part of the earth to kill with the sword, hunger, death, and the beasts of the field.
- 5. The Martyrs Crying (6:9-11)
  - a. John sees under the altar all the souls that were slain for the word of God and the testimony that they held.
  - b. They cried out to God asking how long until their blood would be avenged.
  - c. White robes were given to them; they were told to rest for a little longer, until all the other martyrs should be killed like them.
- 6. A Great Earthquake & the heavens being darkened (6:12-17)
  - a. A great earthquake hits.
  - b. The sun is darkened (became black as sackcloth of hair).
  - c. The moon turns red (became as blood).
  - d. The stars of heaven fell to the earth.
  - e. The heaven departed as a scroll.
  - f. Every island and mountain were moved out of their places.
  - g. All men (great & small) hid themselves in caves and mountains and cried out to the mountains and rocks to hide them from the face of him that sits on the throne and from the wrath of the Lamb.
- ★ Interlude in Chapter 7:
  - 4 angels preparing to release the 4 winds from the 4 corners of the earth but cannot yet;
  - 144,000 of the nation of Israel are sealed by angels (12,000 from each tribe; only Dan is missing; Ephraim is not named, but it is implied they are sealed);
  - Great innumerable multitude in heaven from all tribes and people who have been made white by the blood of the lamb stand before God).
- 7. Silence in heaven (8:1-5)
  - a. Silence in heaven for about half-an-hour.
  - b. The 7 angels that stand before God are given 7 trumpets.
  - c. Another angel comes and stands at the door of the altar and is given much incense to offer (which is the prayers of the saints).
    - i. He offers it upon the golden altar before the throne.
    - ii. The smoke of the incense ascended up before God.
    - iii. He took the censer and filled it with fire from the altar and cast it into the earth: and there were voices, thunders, lightnings, and an earthquake.

- E. The 7 Trumpets are sounded by the 7 angels that stand before God (9-11): Warning Judgments
1. Hail & fire mingled with blood cast upon the EARTH (8:7):
    - \* Result: 1/3 trees burnt up & all green grass burnt up.
  2. Great mountain burning with fire cast into the SEA (8:8-9):
    - \* Result: 1/3 part of the sea became blood; 1/3 part of living creatures in sea died; 1/3 part of the ships were destroyed.
  3. Great Star (named Wormwood) falls from heaven (burning as a lamp) upon the RIVERS & FOUNTAINS OF WATERS (8:10-11):
    - \* Result: 1/3 part of rivers & fountains of waters became wormwood and many men died because of the bitter waters.
  4. Sun, moon, & stars were smitten & darkened in the HEAVENS (8:12-13):
    - \* Result: sun, moon, & stars all darkened for 1/3 part of day & night.
  5. WOE #1: LOCUSTS (9:1-12)
    - a. Star falls from heaven to earth and he's given the key of the bottomless pit.
    - b. He opens it and out comes smoke which darkens the sun and the air.
    - c. Out of the smoke comes LOCUSTS that are given power as scorpions (see 9:7-10 to see their description).
    - d. They are commanded not to hurt any green thing but only the men who do not have the seal of God in their foreheads.
    - e. They have a king over them who is the angel of the bottomless pit named Abaddon/Apollyon (meaning "Destroyer").
    - \* Result: Men are tormented for 5 months and seek death but are not able to die during this plague. (wonder if 1/3 of men are tormented?)
  6. WOE #2: HORSEMAN ARMY (9:13-21)
    - a. The 4 angels that are bound in the great river Euphrates are loosed
    - b. They are released for 13 months & 13 hours to slay men.
    - c. They lead an army of 200 million horsemen to kill men (see 9:16-19 to see description of them).
    - \* Result: 1/3 of men are killed by fire, smoke, & brimstone from the horses mouths.
- ★ Interlude in Chapter 10:1 - 11:14.
- A mighty angel comes down from heaven, puts his right foot on the sea, his left foot on the earth, and cries with a loud voice (like a lion roar); The 7 thunders roar afterwards and time shall be no longer.
  - The 2 prophets prophesy for 1,260 days and have mighty power to kill their enemies and shut heaven from rain, etc... And then ultimately the beast that ascends out of the bottomless pit is given power to overcome them and kill them. The world rejoices as they lie dead in the streets of Jerusalem.
  - 3-and-a-half days later they are resurrected by the Spirit of life, great fear falls upon those who see this, and then they are called up to heaven in a cloud.

- That same hour a great earthquake hits, the tenth part of the city falls, and 7,000 men are killed.
7. WOE #3: SATAN CAST TO EARTH (11:15 - 12:12)
- a. Great Voices in heaven declaring: "The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord and of his Christ, and he shall reign for ever and ever."
  - b. Woman in heaven brings forth man child to rule all nations (caught up to God and his throne); Dragon (Satan) tries to devour this child but is unsuccessful. Woman flees into wilderness where she has a place prepared of God to protect her for 1,260 days.
  - c. War in heaven: Michael & his angels fighting against the dragon & his angels.
  - \* Result: The devil & 1/3 of the angels are cast out of heaven onto the earth and he goes forth in great wrath to persecute the woman and the remnant of her seed knowing that his time is short
- ★ Interlude between the trumpets & the vials in Chapters 13 & 14:
- The beast ascends out of the sea (mouth like lion, feet like bear, looks like a leopard; 7 heads w/the names of blasphemy, 10 horns w/crowns upon them; this represents the Antichrist & his kingdom); the dragon gives the beast his power, seat, & great authority.
  - One of the beast's head is wounded to death but then healed; the whole world worships the beast and the dragon; they are given power to continue 42 months.
  - Another beast ascends out of the earth (2 horns like a lamb, and speaks like a dragon; this is the false prophet and his religious kingdom); he does great wonders to deceive the world and causes the world to worship the beast, to make an image to the beast, give power to the image, and to receive a mark of the beast, or his name, or the number of his name.
  - The 144,000 are raptured and/or resurrected in heaven; 3 angels are sent out to preach: 1st preaches the everlasting gospel; 2nd announces the fall of Babylon; 3rd warns the world that whoever worships the beast or receives his mark will be tormented with fire & brimstone.
  - The 2 harvests: The Son of man comes on a cloud and reaps a harvest on the earth (possibly a rapture, or last end-times revival); another angel comes out and reaps the harvest of the wicked and casts them into the winepress of the wrath of God.
- F. The 7 vials of the wrath of God are poured out by 7 angels who dwell in the Lord's temple in heaven, dressed in pure & white linen with golden girdles on their chest (they are like priests in the heavenly realm) (Chapter 16):      Final Judgments:
- 1. Vial poured upon the EARTH (16:1-2):
    - \* Result: A Noisome & grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of the beast & those who worshipped his image.
  - 2. Vial upon the SEA (16:3):

- \* Result: The sea became blood and every living soul died in the sea.
3. Vial upon the RIVERS & FOUNTAINS OF WATERS (16:4-7):
    - \* Result: They all become blood (because they have shed the blood of saints & prophets; thus, the Lord has given them blood to drink).
  4. Vial upon the SUN (16:8-9):
    - \* Result: Given power to scorch men with fire & great heat; men blaspheme God's name and will not repent.
  5. Vial upon the SEAT of the BEAST (16:10-11):
    - \* Result: His kingdom is full of darkness & they gnawed their tongues for pain; they blasphemed God because of their pains & sores and will not repent.
  6. Vial upon the GREAT RIVER EUPHRATES (16:12-16):
    - \* Result: The water was dried up (to prepare the way for the kings of the east to march to Jerusalem); 3 unclean spirits like frogs came out of the mouths of the dragon, the beast, and the false prophet. These are the spirits of devils working miracles that go forth to the kings of the earth to gather them together to the battle of God in the valley of Armageddon.
  7. Vial into the AIR (16:17-21)
    - a. God declares "It is done."
    - b. Voices, thunders, lightnings, & a great earthquake (so mighty an earthquake & so great):
      - i. The great city (possibly Jerusalem) was divided into 3 parts.
      - ii. The cities of the nations fell.
      - iii. Great Babylon came into remembrance before God to give her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of his wrath.
      - iv. Every island fled away, and the mountains were not found.
    - \* Result: There fell upon men a great hail out of heaven (each hail stone about the weight of 1 talent = 75 pounds = 35 kilograms).
- G. The Final Culmination of all things (7 Major Events):
1. The Fall of Babylon: A woman sitting upon a scarlet colored beast: The great whore: Mystery, Babylon the Great, the mother of harlots & abominations of the earth. She is drunken with the blood of the saints & martyrs and has lived deliciously.
    - The scarlet colored beast is the resurrected beast of Revelation 13;
    - The 10 horns of the beast are 10 kings that will give their power to the beast and will ultimately hate the whore and will make her desolate and naked, and will eat her flesh and burn her with fire.
    - Babylon will fall in one hour and the whole earth will mourn her.
  2. The wife of the lamb makes herself ready and is granted the fine linen clean and white.
  3. Heaven is opened and Jesus comes back on a White horse followed by armies of his saints.
    - He slaughters all his enemies.

- The beast & the false prophet are taken alive and cast into the lake of fire.
- The devil is taken by an angel from heaven who binds him with a great chain in the bottomless pit for 1,000 years.
- 4. The first resurrection happens (the resurrection of life): The martyrs & saints are raised and seated on thrones with Jesus to rule and to reign for 1,000 years.
  - Christ & his saints rule this earth for 1,000 years.
- 5. After the 1,000 years the devil is loosed one last time:
  - He goes out to deceive the nations in the 4 quarters of the earth (Gog & Magog; maybe Russia, Canada, Chile, Australia...?)
  - They gather together to battle against the camp of the saints, and against Jerusalem.
  - Fire comes down from God out of heaven and devours them.
  - The devil is taken and cast into the lake of fire where he will be tormented day and night for ever and ever.
- 6. The final judgment:
  - The great white throne appears and the earth and heaven flee away from the face of God.
  - The resurrection of the dead: (the resurrection of damnation);
  - The dead, small and great stand before God.
  - The books were opened and the book of life.
  - Everyone is judged out of those books according to their works.
  - Death & hell were cast into the lake of fire = 2nd death
  - Whoever was not written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.
- 7. New heaven & new earth:
  - The new heaven and the new earth appear along with the new Jerusalem (which is the Lamb's wife).
  - God will finally dwell with man again.
  - All tears will be wiped away and there will be no more sorrow, crying, nor tears.
  - All things are made new.
  - The new Jerusalem is unveiled in all her glory where the Lord (Father) and the Lamb (Son) will dwell in forevermore.

“And he that sat upon the throne said, ‘Behold, I make all things new.’ And he said unto me, ‘Write: for these words are true and faithful.’ And he said unto me, ‘It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely. He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.’” - The Lord God Almighty (Revelation 21:5-7)